



# Random Euclidean coverage from within

Mathew D. Penrose<sup>1</sup>

Received: 20 April 2021 / Revised: 30 December 2021 / Accepted: 21 November 2022 /  
Published online: 29 January 2023  
© The Author(s) 2023

## Abstract

Let  $X_1, X_2, \dots$  be independent random uniform points in a bounded domain  $A \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  with smooth boundary. Define the *coverage threshold*  $R_n$  to be the smallest  $r$  such that  $A$  is covered by the balls of radius  $r$  centred on  $X_1, \dots, X_n$ . We obtain the limiting distribution of  $R_n$  and also a strong law of large numbers for  $R_n$  in the large- $n$  limit. For example, if  $A$  has volume 1 and perimeter  $|\partial A|$ , if  $d = 3$  then  $\mathbb{P}[n\pi R_n^3 - \log n - 2 \log(\log n) \leq x]$  converges to  $\exp(-2^{-4}\pi^{5/3}|\partial A|e^{-2x/3})$  and  $(n\pi R_n^3)/(\log n) \rightarrow 1$  almost surely, and if  $d = 2$  then  $\mathbb{P}[n\pi R_n^2 - \log n - \log(\log n) \leq x]$  converges to  $\exp(-e^{-x} - |\partial A|\pi^{-1/2}e^{-x/2})$ . We give similar results for general  $d$ , and also for the case where  $A$  is a polytope. We also generalize to allow for multiple coverage. The analysis relies on classical results by Hall and by Janson, along with a careful treatment of boundary effects. For the strong laws of large numbers, we can relax the requirement that the underlying density on  $A$  be uniform.

**Keywords** Coverage threshold · Weak limit · Strong law of large numbers · Boolean model · Poisson point process

**Mathematics Subject Classification** 60D05 · 60G55 · 60F05 · 60F15

## 1 Introduction

This paper is primarily concerned with the following *random coverage* problem. Given a specified compact region  $A$  in a  $d$ -dimensional Euclidean space, what is the probability that  $A$  is fully covered by a union of Euclidean balls of radius  $r$  centred on  $n$  points placed independently uniformly at random in  $A$ , in the large- $n$  limit with  $r = r(n)$  becoming small in an appropriate manner?

---

Supported by EPSRC Grant EP/T028653/1.

✉ Mathew D. Penrose  
m.d.penrose@bath.ac.uk

<sup>1</sup> Department of Mathematical Sciences, University of Bath, Bath BA2 7AY, UK

This is a very natural type of question with a long history; see for example [3, 7, 11–13, 16, 20]. Potential applications include wireless communications [3, 18], ballistics [13], genomics [2], statistics [8], immunology [20], stochastic optimization [23], and topological data analysis [4, 9].

In an alternative version of this question, one considers a smaller compact region  $B \subset A^\circ$  ( $A^\circ$  denotes the interior of  $A$ ), and asks whether  $B$  (rather than all of  $A$ ) is covered. This version is simpler because boundary effects are avoided. This alternative version of our question was answered independently in the 1980s by Hall [12] and Janson [16]. Another way to avoid boundary effects would be to consider coverage of a smooth manifold such as a sphere (as in [20]), and this was also addressed in [16].

However, the original question does not appear to have been addressed systematically until now (at least, not when  $d > 1$ ). Janson [16, p. 108] makes some remarks about the case where  $A = [0, 1]^d$  and one uses balls of the  $\ell_\infty$  norm, but does not consider more general classes of  $A$  or Euclidean balls.

This question seems well worth addressing. In many of the applications areas, it is natural to consider the influence only of the random points placed within the region  $A$  rather than also hypothetical points placed outside  $A$ , for example in the problem of statistical set estimation which we shall discuss below.

We shall express our results in terms of the *coverage threshold*  $R_n$ , which we define to be the smallest radius of balls, centred on a set  $\mathcal{X}_n$  of  $n$  independent uniform random points in  $A$ , required to cover  $A$ . Note that  $R_n$  is equal to the Hausdorff distance between the sets  $\mathcal{X}_n$  and  $A$ . More generally, for  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  the *k-coverage threshold*  $R_{n,k}$  is the smallest radius required to cover  $A$   $k$  times. These thresholds are random variables, because the locations of the centres are random. We investigate their probabilistic behaviour as  $n$  becomes large.

We shall determine the limiting behaviour of  $\mathbb{P}[R_{n,k} \leq r_n]$  for any fixed  $k$  and any sequence of numbers  $(r_n)$ , for the case where  $A$  is smoothly bounded (for general  $d \geq 2$ ) or where  $A$  is a polytope (for  $d = 2$  or  $d = 3$ ). We also obtain similar results for a high-intensity *Poisson* sample in  $A$ , which may be more relevant in some applications, as argued in [12].

We also derive strong laws of large numbers showing that  $nR_{n,k}^d / \log n$  converges almost surely to a finite positive limit, and establishing the value of the limit. These strong laws carry over to more general cases where  $k$  may vary with  $n$ , and the distribution of points may be non-uniform. We give results of this type for  $A$  smoothly bounded, or for  $A$  a convex polytope.

We emphasise that in all of these results, the limiting behaviour depends on the geometry of  $\partial A$ , the topological boundary of  $A$ . For example, we shall show that when  $d = 3$  and the points are uniformly distributed over a polyhedron, the limiting behaviour of  $R_n$  is determined by the angle of the sharpest edge if this angle is less than  $\pi/2$ . If this angle exceeds  $\pi/2$  then the location in  $A$  furthest from the sample  $\mathcal{X}_n$  is asymptotically uniformly distributed over  $\partial A$ , but if this angle is less than  $\pi/2$  the location in  $A$  furthest from  $\mathcal{X}_n$  is asymptotically uniformly distributed over the union of those edges which are sharpest, i.e. those edges which achieve the minimum subtended angle.

We restrict attention here to coverage by Euclidean balls of equal radius. The work of [12, 16] allowed for generalizations such as other shapes or variable radii, in their

versions of our problem. We do not attempt to address these generalizations here; in principle it may be possible, but it would add considerably to the complication of the formulation of results.

One application lies in statistical *set estimation*. One may wish to estimate the set  $A$  from the sample  $\mathcal{X}_n$ . One possible estimator in the literature is the union of balls of radius  $r_n$  centred on the points of  $\mathcal{X}_n$ , for some suitable sequence  $(r_n)_{n \geq 1}$  decreasing to zero. In particular, when estimating the perimeter of  $A$  one may well wish to take  $r_n$  large enough so that these balls fully cover  $A$ , that is,  $r_n \geq R_n$ . For further discussion see Cuevas and Rodríguez-Casal [8].

We briefly discuss some related concepts. One of these is the *maximal spacing* of the sample  $\mathcal{X}_n$ . This is defined to be volume of the largest Euclidean ball that can be fitted into the set  $A \setminus \mathcal{X}_n$  (the reason for the terminology becomes apparent from considering the case with  $d = 1$ ). More generally, the *maximal  $k$ -spacing* of the sample is defined to be volume of the largest Euclidean ball that can be fitted inside the set  $A$  while containing fewer than  $k$  points of  $\mathcal{X}_n$ .

The maximal spacing also has a long history; see for example [1, 10, 14, 16]. As described in [1], there are many statistical applications. Essentially, it differs from the coverage threshold  $R_n$  only because of boundary effects (we shall elaborate on this in Sect. 2), but these effects are often important in determining the asymptotic behaviour of the threshold.

Another interpretation of the coverage threshold is via *Voronoi cells*. Calka and Chenavier [6] have considered, among other things, extremes of circumscribed radii of a Poisson–Voronoi tessellation on all of  $\mathbb{R}^d$  (the circumscribed radius of a cell is the radius of the smallest ball centred on the nucleus that contains the cell). To get a finite maximum they consider the maximum restricted to those cells having non-empty intersection with some bounded window  $A \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ . This construction avoids dealing with delicate boundary effects, and the limit distribution, for large intensity, is determined in [6] using results from [16].

It seems at least as natural to consider Voronoi cells with respect to the Poisson sample *restricted to  $A$* . A little thought (similar to arguments given in [6]) shows that the largest circumradius of the Voronoi cells *inside  $A$*  (i.e., the intersections with  $A$  of the Voronoi cells), with respect to the sample  $\mathcal{X}_n$ , is equal to  $R_n$ , and likewise for a Poisson sample in  $A$ ; thus, our results add to those given in [6].

A somewhat related topic is the *convex hull* of the random sample  $\mathcal{X}_n$ . For  $d = 2$  with  $A$  convex, the limiting behaviour of the Hausdorff distance from this convex hull to  $A$  is obtained in [5]. The limiting behaviour of the Hausdorff distance from  $\mathcal{X}_n$  itself to  $A$  (which is our  $R_n$ ) is *not* the same as for the convex hull.

## 2 Definitions and notation

Throughout this paper, we work within the following mathematical framework. Let  $d \in \mathbb{N}$ . Suppose we have the following ingredients:

- A compact, Riemann measurable set  $A \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  (Riemann measurability of a bounded set in  $\mathbb{R}^d$  amounts to its boundary having zero Lebesgue measure).

- A Borel probability measure  $\mu$  on  $A$  with probability density function  $f$ .
- A specified set  $B \subset A$  (possibly  $B = A$ ).
- On a common probability space  $(\mathbb{S}, \mathcal{F}, \mathbb{P})$ , a sequence  $X_1, X_2, \dots$  of independent identically distributed random  $d$ -vectors with common probability distribution  $\mu$ , and also a unit rate Poisson counting process  $(Z_t, t \geq 0)$ , independent of  $(X_1, X_2, \dots)$  (so  $Z_t$  is Poisson distributed with mean  $t$  for each  $t > 0$ ).

For  $n \in \mathbb{N}, t > 0$ , let  $\mathcal{X}_n := \{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ , and let  $\mathcal{P}_t := \{X_1, \dots, X_{Z_t}\}$ . These are the point processes that concern us here. Observe that  $\mathcal{P}_t$  is a Poisson point process in  $\mathbb{R}^d$  with intensity measure  $t\mu$  (see e.g. [19]).

For  $x \in \mathbb{R}^d$  and  $r > 0$  set  $B(x, r) := \{y \in \mathbb{R}^d : \|y - x\| \leq r\}$  where  $\|\cdot\|$  denotes the Euclidean norm. (We write  $B_{(d)}(x, r)$  for this if we wish to emphasise the dimension.) For  $r > 0$ , let  $A^{(r)} := \{x \in A : B(x, r) \subset A^o\}$ , the ‘ $r$ -interior’ of  $A$ .

Also, define the set  $A^{[r]}$  to be the interior of the union of all hypercubes of the form  $\prod_{i=1}^d [n_i r, (n_i + 1)r]$ , with  $n_1, \dots, n_d \in \mathbb{Z}$ , that are contained in  $A^o$  (the set  $A^{[r]}$  resembles  $A^{(r)}$  but is guaranteed to be Riemann measurable).

For any point set  $\mathcal{X} \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  and any  $D \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  we write  $\mathcal{X}(D)$  for the number of points of  $\mathcal{X}$  in  $D$ , and we use below the convention  $\inf\{\} := +\infty$ .

Given  $n, k \in \mathbb{N}$ , and  $t \in (0, \infty)$ , define the  $k$ -coverage thresholds  $R_{n,k}$  and  $R'_{t,k}$  by

$$R_{n,k} := \inf \{r > 0 : \mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r)) \geq k \quad \forall x \in B\}; \tag{2.1}$$

$$R'_{t,k} := R_{Z_t,k} := \inf \{r > 0 : \mathcal{P}_t(B(x, r)) \geq k \quad \forall x \in B\}, \tag{2.2}$$

and define also the *interior  $k$ -coverage thresholds*

$$\tilde{R}_{n,k} := \inf \left\{ r > 0 : \mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r)) \geq k \quad \forall x \in B \cap A^{(r)} \right\}; \tag{2.3}$$

$$\tilde{R}_{Z_t,k} := \inf \left\{ r > 0 : \mathcal{P}_t(B(x, r)) \geq k \quad \forall x \in B \cap A^{(r)} \right\}. \tag{2.4}$$

Set  $R_n := R_{n,1}$ , and  $R'_t := R'_{t,1}$ , and  $\tilde{R}_n := \tilde{R}_{n,1}$ . Then  $R_n$  is the coverage threshold. Observe that  $R_n = \inf\{r > 0 : B \subset \cup_{i=1}^n B(X_i, r)\}$ . In the case  $B = A$ , this agrees with our earlier definition of  $R_n$ .

We are chiefly interested in the asymptotic behaviour of  $R_n$  for large  $n$ . More generally, we consider  $R_{n,k}$  where  $k$  may vary with  $n$ . We are especially interested in the case with  $B = A$ .

Observe that  $\tilde{R}_{n,k}$  is the smallest  $r$  such that  $B \cap A^{(r)}$  is covered  $k$  times by the balls of radius  $r$  centred on the points of  $\mathcal{X}_n$ . It can be seen that when  $B = A$ , the maximal  $k$ -spacing of the sample  $\mathcal{X}_n$  (defined earlier) is equal to  $\theta_d \tilde{R}_n^d$ , where  $\theta_d := \pi^{d/2} / \Gamma(1 + d/2)$ , the volume of the unit ball in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ .

We use the Poissonized  $k$ -coverage threshold  $R'_{t,k}$ , and the interior  $k$ -coverage thresholds  $\tilde{R}_{n,k}$  and  $\tilde{R}_{Z_t,k}$ , mainly as stepping stones towards deriving results for  $R_{n,k}$  and  $\tilde{R}_{n,k}$  respectively, but they are also of interest in their own right. Indeed, some of the literature [3, 12, 13, 18] is concerned more with  $R'_t$  than with  $R_n$ , and we have already mentioned the literature on the maximal spacing.

We now give some further notation used throughout. For  $D \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ , let  $\bar{D}$  and  $D^o$  denote the closure of  $D$  and interior of  $D$ , respectively. Let  $|D|$  denote the Lebesgue

measure (volume) of  $D$ , and  $|\partial D|$  the perimeter of  $D$ , i.e. the  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional Hausdorff measure of  $\partial D$ , when these are defined. Write  $\log \log t$  for  $\log(\log t), t > 1$ . Let  $o$  denote the origin in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ . Set  $\mathbb{H} := \mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times [0, \infty)$  and  $\partial\mathbb{H} := \mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times \{0\}$ .

Given two sets  $\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{Y} \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ , we set  $\mathcal{X} \Delta \mathcal{Y} := (\mathcal{X} \setminus \mathcal{Y}) \cup (\mathcal{Y} \setminus \mathcal{X})$ , the symmetric difference between  $\mathcal{X}$  and  $\mathcal{Y}$ . Also, we write  $\mathcal{X} \oplus \mathcal{Y}$  for the set  $\{x + y : x \in \mathcal{X}, y \in \mathcal{Y}\}$ . Given also  $x \in \mathbb{R}^d$  we write  $x + \mathcal{Y}$  for  $\{x\} \oplus \mathcal{Y}$ .

Given  $x, y \in \mathbb{R}^d$ , we denote by  $[x, y]$  the line segment from  $x$  to  $y$ , that is, the convex hull of the set  $\{x, y\}$ . We write  $a \wedge b$  (respectively  $a \vee b$ ) for the minimum (resp. maximum) of any two numbers  $a, b \in \mathbb{R}$ .

Given  $m \in \mathbb{N}$  and functions  $f : \mathbb{N} \cap [m, \infty) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  and  $g : \mathbb{N} \cap [m, \infty) \rightarrow (0, \infty)$ , we write  $f(n) = O(g(n))$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  if  $\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} |f(n)|/g(n) < \infty$ . We write  $f(n) = o(g(n))$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  if  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} f(n)/g(n) = 0$ . We write  $f(n) = \Theta(g(n))$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  if both  $f(n) = O(g(n))$  and  $g(n) = O(f(n))$  (and  $f > 0$ ). Given  $s > 0$  and functions  $f : (0, s) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  and  $g : (0, s) \rightarrow (0, \infty)$ , we write  $f(r) = O(g(r))$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ , or  $g(r) = \Omega(f(r))$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ , if  $\limsup_{r \downarrow 0} |f(r)|/g(r) < \infty$ . We write  $f(r) = o(g(r))$  as  $r \downarrow 0$  if  $\lim_{r \downarrow 0} f(r)/g(r) = 0$ , and  $f(r) \sim g(r)$  as  $r \downarrow 0$  if this limit is 1.

### 3 Convergence in distribution

The main results of this section are concerned with weak convergence for  $R_{n,k}$  (defined at (2.1)) as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  with  $k$  fixed, in cases where  $f$  is uniform on  $A$  and  $B = A$ .

Our first result concerns the case where  $A$  has a smooth boundary in the following sense. We say that  $A$  has  $C^2$  boundary if for each  $x \in \partial A$  there exists a neighbourhood  $U$  of  $x$  and a real-valued function  $f$  that is defined on an open set in  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  and twice continuously differentiable, such that  $\partial A \cap U$ , after a rotation, is the graph of the function  $f$ .

Given  $d \in \mathbb{N}$ , define the constant

$$c_d := \frac{1}{d!} \left( \frac{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma((d/2) + 1)}{\Gamma((d + 1)/2)} \right)^{d-1}. \tag{3.1}$$

Note that  $c_1 = c_2 = 1$ , and  $c_3 = 3\pi^2/32$ . Moreover, using Stirling’s formula one can show that  $c_d^{1/d} \sim e/(\pi(2d))^{1/2}$  as  $d \rightarrow \infty$ . Given also  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ , for  $d \geq 2$  set

$$c_{d,k} := \left( \frac{c_{d-1}}{(k-1)!} \right) \theta_d^{2-d-1/d} \theta_{d-1}^{2d-3} \theta_{d-2}^{1-d} (1-1/d)^{d+k-3+1/d} 2^{-1+1/d}. \tag{3.2}$$

By some tedious algebra, one can simplify this to

$$c_{d,1} = (d!)^{-1} 2^{1-d} \pi^{(d/2)-1} (d-1)^{d+(1/d)-2} \Gamma\left(\frac{d+1}{2}\right)^{1-d} \Gamma\left(\frac{d}{2}\right)^{d+1/d-1},$$

with  $c_{d,k} = c_{d,1}(1-1/d)^{k-1}/(k-1)!$  for  $k > 1$ . Note that  $c_{2,k} = 2^{1-k} \pi^{-1/2}/(k-1)!$  and  $c_{3,k} = 2^{k-5} 3^{1-k} \pi^{5/3}/(k-1)!$ , and  $c_{d,1}^{1/d} \sim e/(2d)^{1/2}$  as  $d \rightarrow \infty$ .

In all limiting statements in the sequel,  $n$  takes values in  $\mathbb{N}$  while  $t$  takes values in  $(0, \infty)$ .

**Theorem 3.1** *Suppose that  $d \geq 2$  and  $f = f_0 \mathbf{1}_A$ , where  $A \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  is compact, and has  $C^2$  boundary, and  $f_0 := |A|^{-1}$ . Assume  $B = A$ . Let  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ ,  $\zeta \in \mathbb{R}$ .*

*Then*

$$\begin{aligned} & \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P} \left[ \left( \frac{n\theta_d f_0 R_{n,k}^d}{2} \right) - \left( \frac{d-1}{d} \right) \log(nf_0) - (d+k-3+1/d) \log \log n \leq \zeta \right] \\ &= \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P} \left[ \left( \frac{t\theta_d f_0 (R'_{t,k})^d}{2} \right) - \left( \frac{d-1}{d} \right) \log(tf_0) - (d+k-3+1/d) \log \log t \leq \zeta \right] \\ &= \begin{cases} \exp(-|A|e^{-2\zeta} - c_{2,1}|\partial A|e^{-\zeta}) & \text{if } d = 2, k = 1 \\ \exp(-c_{d,k}|\partial A|e^{-\zeta}) & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \end{aligned} \tag{3.3}$$

When  $d = 2, k = 1$  the exponent in (3.3) has two terms. This is because the location in  $A$  furthest from the sample  $\mathcal{X}_n$  might lie either in the interior of  $A$ , or on the boundary.

When  $d \geq 3$  or  $k \geq 2$ , the exponent of (3.3) has only one term, because the location in  $A$  with furthest  $k$ -th nearest point of  $\mathcal{X}_n$  is located, with probability tending to 1, on the boundary of  $A$ , and likewise for  $\mathcal{P}_t$ . Increasing either  $d$  or  $k$  makes it more likely that this location lies on the boundary, and the exceptional nature of the limit in the case  $(d, k) = (2, 1)$  reflects this.

We also consider the case where  $A$  is a polytope, only for  $d = 2$  or  $d = 3$ . All polytopes in this paper are assumed to be bounded, connected, and finite (i.e. have finitely many faces). We do not require the polytope to be convex here.

**Theorem 3.2** *Suppose  $d = 2, B = A$ , and  $f = f_0 \mathbf{1}_A$ , where  $f_0 := |A|^{-1}$ . Assume that  $A$  is compact and polygonal.*

*Let  $|\partial A|$  denote the length of the boundary of  $A$ . Let  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ ,  $\zeta \in \mathbb{R}$ . Then*

$$\begin{aligned} & \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[n(\pi/2) f_0 R_{n,k}^2 - (1/2) \log(nf_0) - (k - 1/2) \log \log n \leq \zeta] \\ &= \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[t(\pi/2) f_0 (R'_{t,k})^2 - (1/2) \log(tf_0) - (k - 1/2) \log \log t \leq \zeta] \\ &= \begin{cases} \exp(-|A|e^{-2\zeta} - |\partial A|\pi^{-1/2}e^{-\zeta}) & \text{if } k = 1, \\ \exp(-c_{2,k}|\partial A|e^{-\zeta}) & \text{if } k \geq 2. \end{cases} \end{aligned} \tag{3.4}$$

One might seek to extend Theorem 3.2 to a more general class of sets  $A$  including both polygons (covered by Theorem 3.2) and sets with  $C^2$  boundary (covered by Theorem 3.1). One could take sets  $A$  having piecewise  $C^2$  boundary, with the extra condition that the corners of  $A$  are *not too pointy*, in the sense that for each corner  $q$ , there exists a triangle with vertex at  $q$  that is contained in  $A$ . We would expect that it is possible to extend the result to this more general class.

When  $d = 3$  and  $A$  is polyhedral, there are several cases to consider, depending on the value of the angle  $\alpha_1$  subtended by the ‘sharpest edge’ of  $\partial A$ . The angle subtended

by an edge  $e$  is defined as follows. Denote the two faces meeting at  $e$  by  $F_1, F_2$ . Let  $p$  be a point in the interior of the edge, and for  $i = 1, 2$  let  $\ell_i$  be a line segment starting from  $p$  that lies within  $F_i$  and is perpendicular to the edge  $e$ . Let  $\theta$  denote the angle between the line segments  $\ell_1$  and  $\ell_2$  (so  $0 < \theta < \pi$ ). The angle subtended by the edge  $e$  is  $\theta$  if there is a neighbourhood  $U$  of  $p$  such that  $A \cap U$  is convex, and is  $2\pi - \theta$  if there is no such neighbourhood of  $p$ .

If  $\alpha_1 < \pi/2$  then the location in  $A$  furthest from the sample  $\mathcal{X}_n$  is likely to be on a 1-dimensional edge of  $\partial A$ , while if  $\alpha_1 > \pi/2$  the furthest location from the sample is likely to be on a 2-dimensional face of  $\partial A$ , in the limit  $n \rightarrow \infty$ . If  $\alpha_1 = \pi/2$  (for example, for a cube), both of these possibilities have non-vanishing probability in the limit.

Since there are several cases to consider, to make the statement of the result more compact we put it in terms of  $\mathbb{P}[R_{n,k} \leq r_n]$  for a sequence of constants  $(r_n)$ .

**Theorem 3.3** *Suppose  $d = 3$ ,  $A$  is polyhedral,  $B = A$  and  $f = f_0 \mathbf{1}_A$ , where  $f_0 := |A|^{-1}$ . Denote the 1-dimensional edges of  $A$  by  $e_1, \dots, e_\kappa$ . For each  $i \in \{1, \dots, \kappa\}$ , let  $\alpha_i$  denote the angle that  $A$  subtends at edge  $e_i$  (with  $0 < \alpha_i < 2\pi$ ), and write  $|e_i|$  for the length of  $e_i$ . Assume the edges are listed in order so that  $\alpha_1 \leq \alpha_2 \leq \dots \leq \alpha_\kappa$ . Let  $|\partial_1 A|$  denote the total area (i.e., 2-dimensional Hausdorff measure) of all faces of  $A$ , and let  $|\partial_2 A|$  denote the total length of those edges  $e_i$  for which  $\alpha_i = \alpha_1$ . Let  $\beta \in \mathbb{R}$  and  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ . Let  $(r_t)_{t>0}$  be a family of real numbers satisfying (as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ )*

$$(2\alpha_1 \wedge \pi) f_0 t r_t^3 - \log(t f_0) - \beta = \begin{cases} (3k - 1) \log \log t + o(1) & \text{if } \alpha_1 \leq \pi/2 \\ (\frac{1+3k}{2}) \log \log t + o(1) & \text{if } \alpha_1 > \pi/2. \end{cases}$$

Then

$$\begin{aligned} \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[R_{n,k} \leq r_n] &= \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[R'_{t,k} \leq r_t] \\ &= \begin{cases} \exp\left(-\frac{3^{1-k} \alpha_1^{1/3} |\partial_2 A| e^{-\beta/3}}{(k-1)! (32)^{1/3}}\right) & \text{if } \alpha_1 < \pi/2, \text{ or } (\alpha_1 = \pi/2, k > 1) \\ \exp\left(-\frac{3\pi^{5/3} 2^k |\partial_1 A| e^{-2\beta/3}}{(k-1)! 3^k 32}\right) & \text{if } \alpha_1 > \pi/2 \\ \exp\left(-\frac{\pi^{1/3} |\partial_2 A| e^{-\beta/3}}{4} - \frac{\pi^{5/3} |\partial_1 A| e^{-2\beta/3}}{16}\right) & \text{if } \alpha_1 = \pi/2, k = 1. \end{cases} \end{aligned} \tag{3.5}$$

We now give a result in general  $d$  for  $\tilde{R}_{n,k}$ , and for  $R_{n,k}$  in the case with  $\bar{B} \subset A^o$  (now we no longer require  $B = A$ ). These cases are simpler because boundary effects are avoided. In fact, the result stated below has some overlap with already known results; it is convenient to state it here too for comparison with the results just given, and because we shall be using it to prove those results.

**Proposition 3.4** *Suppose  $A$  is compact with  $|A| > 0$  and  $f = f_0 \mathbf{1}_A$ , where  $f_0 := |A|^{-1}$ , and  $B \subset A$  is Riemann measurable. Let  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  and  $\beta \in \mathbb{R}$ . Then*

$$\begin{aligned}
 & \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[n\theta_d f_0 \tilde{R}_{n,k}^d - \log(nf_0) - (d+k-2) \log \log n \leq \beta] \\
 &= \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[t\theta_d f_0 (\tilde{R}_{Z_t,k})^d - \log(tf_0) - (d+k-2) \log \log t \leq \beta] \\
 &= \exp(-(c_d/(k-1)!)|B|e^{-\beta}).
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{3.6}$$

If moreover  $B$  is closed with  $B \subset A^o$ , then

$$\begin{aligned}
 & \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[n\theta_d f_0 R_{n,k}^d - \log(nf_0) - (d+k-2) \log \log n \leq \beta] \\
 &= \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[t\theta_d f_0 (R'_{t,k})^d - \log(tf_0) - (d+k-2) \log \log t \leq \beta] \\
 &= \exp(-(c_d/(k-1)!)|B|e^{-\beta}).
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{3.7}$$

The case  $k = 1$  of the second equality of (3.7) can be found in [6]. It provides a stronger asymptotic result than the one in [18]. A similar statement to the case  $k = 1$  of (3.6) can be found in [17].

**Remark 3.5** Let  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ . The definition (2.1) of the coverage threshold  $R_{n,k}$  suggests we think of the number and (random) locations of points as being given, and consider the smallest radius of balls around those points needed to cover  $B$   $k$  times.

Alternatively, as in [16], one may think of the radius of the balls as being given, and consider the smallest number of balls (with locations generated sequentially at random) needed to cover  $B$   $k$  times. That is, given  $r > 0$ , define the random variable

$$N(r, k) := \inf\{n \in \mathbb{N} : \mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r)) \geq k \quad \forall x \in B\},$$

and note that  $N(r, k) \leq n$  if and only if  $R_{n,k} \leq r$ . In the setting of Theorem 3.1, 3.2 or 3.3, one may obtain a limiting distribution for  $N(r, k)$  (suitably scaled and centred) as  $r \downarrow 0$  by using those results together with the following (we write  $\xrightarrow{\mathcal{D}}$  for convergence in distribution):

**Proposition 3.6** Let  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ . Suppose  $Z$  is a random variable with a continuous cumulative distribution function, and  $a, b, c, c' \in \mathbb{R}$  with  $a > 0, b > 0$  are such that  $anR_{n,k}^d - b \log n - c \log \log n - c' \xrightarrow{\mathcal{D}} Z$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ . Then as  $r \downarrow 0$ ,

$$ar^d N(r, k) - b \log \left( (b/a)r^{-d} \right) - (c + b) \log \log (r^{-d}) - c' \xrightarrow{\mathcal{D}} Z.$$

For example, using Theorem 3.1, and applying Proposition 3.6 with  $a = \theta_d f_0/2$ ,  $b = (d-1)/d$ ,  $c = d+k-3+1/d$ , and  $c' = ((d-1)/d) \log f_0$ , we obtain the following:



**Corollary 3.7** *Suppose that  $d \geq 2$  and  $f = f_0 \mathbf{1}_A$ , where  $A \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  is compact, and has  $C^2$  boundary, and  $f_0 := |A|^{-1}$ . Assume  $B = A$ . Let  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ ,  $\zeta \in \mathbb{R}$ . Then*

$$\begin{aligned} & \lim_{r \downarrow 0} \mathbb{P} \left[ \left( \frac{\theta_d f_0 r^d N(r, k)}{2} \right) - \left( \frac{d-1}{d} \right) \log \left( \left( \frac{2(d-1)}{d\theta_d} \right) r^{-d} \right) \right. \\ & \quad \left. - (d+k-2) \log \log r^{-d} \leq \zeta \right] \\ & = \begin{cases} \exp(-|A|e^{-2\zeta} - c_{2,1}|\partial A|e^{-\zeta}) & \text{if } d = 2, k = 1 \\ \exp(-c_{d,k}|\partial A|e^{-\zeta}) & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \end{aligned} \tag{3.8}$$

### 4 Strong laws of large numbers

The results in this section provide strong laws of large numbers (SLLNs) for  $R_n$ . For these results we relax the condition that  $f$  be uniform on  $A$ . We give strong laws for  $R_n$  when  $A = B$  and  $A$  is either smoothly bounded or a polytope. Also for general  $A$  we give strong laws for  $R_n$  when  $\bar{B} \subset A^o$ , and for  $\tilde{R}_n$  for general  $B$ .

More generally, we consider  $R_{n,k}$ , allowing  $k$  to vary with  $n$ . Throughout this section, assume we are given a constant  $\beta \in [0, \infty]$  and a sequence  $k : \mathbb{N} \rightarrow \mathbb{N}$  with

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (k(n)/\log n) = \beta; \quad \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (k(n)/n) = 0. \tag{4.1}$$

We make use of the following notation throughout:

$$f_0 := \text{ess inf}_{x \in B} f(x); \quad f_1 := \inf_{x \in \partial A} f(x); \tag{4.2}$$

$$H(t) := \begin{cases} 1 - t + t \log t, & \text{if } t > 0 \\ 1, & \text{if } t = 0. \end{cases} \tag{4.3}$$

Observe that  $-H(\cdot)$  is unimodal with a maximum value of 0 at  $t = 1$ . Given  $a \in [0, \infty)$ , we define the function  $\hat{H}_a : [0, \infty) \rightarrow [a, \infty)$  by

$$y = \hat{H}_a(x) \iff yH(a/y) = x, \quad y \geq a,$$

with  $\hat{H}_0(0) := 0$ . Note that  $\hat{H}_a(x)$  is increasing in  $x$ , and that  $\hat{H}_0(x) = x$  and  $\hat{H}_a(0) = a$ .

Throughout this paper, the phrase ‘almost surely’ or ‘a.s.’ means ‘except on a set of  $\mathbb{P}$ -measure zero’. We write  $f|_A$  for the restriction of  $f$  to  $A$ . If  $f_0 = 0$ ,  $b > 0$  we interpret  $b/f_0$  as  $+\infty$  in the following limiting statements, and likewise for  $f_1$ .

**Theorem 4.1** *Suppose that  $d \geq 2$  and  $A \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  is compact with  $C^2$  boundary, and that  $f|_A$  is continuous at  $x$  for all  $x \in \partial A$ . Assume also that  $B = A$  and (4.1) holds. Then as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ , almost surely*

$$(n\theta_d R_{n,k(n)}^d)/k(n) \rightarrow \max(1/f_0, 2/f_1) \quad \text{if } \beta = \infty; \tag{4.4}$$

$$(n\theta_d R_{n,k(n)}^d)/\log n \rightarrow \max\left(\hat{H}_\beta(1)/f_0, 2\hat{H}_\beta(1 - 1/d)/f_1\right), \quad \text{if } \beta < \infty. \tag{4.5}$$

In particular, if  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  is a constant, then as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ , almost surely

$$(n\theta_d R_{n,k}^d)/\log n \rightarrow \max(1/f_0, (2 - 2/d)/f_1). \tag{4.6}$$

We now consider the case where  $A$  is a polytope. Assume the polytope  $A$  is compact and finite, that is, has finitely many faces. Let  $\Phi(A)$  denote the set of all faces of  $A$  (of all dimensions). Given a face  $\varphi \in \Phi(A)$ , denote the dimension of this face by  $D(\varphi)$ . Then  $0 \leq D(\varphi) \leq d - 1$ , and  $\varphi$  is a  $D(\varphi)$ -dimensional polytope embedded in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ . Set  $f_\varphi := \inf_{x \in \varphi} f(x)$ , let  $\varphi^\circ$  denote the relative interior of  $\varphi$ , and set  $\partial\varphi := \varphi \setminus \varphi^\circ$ . Then there is a cone  $\mathcal{K}_\varphi$  in  $\mathbb{R}^d$  such that every  $x \in \varphi^\circ$  has a neighbourhood  $U_x$  such that  $A \cap U_x = (x + \mathcal{K}_\varphi) \cap U_x$ . Define the angular volume  $\rho_\varphi$  of  $\varphi$  to be the  $d$ -dimensional Lebesgue measure of  $\mathcal{K}_\varphi \cap B(o, 1)$ .

For example, if  $D(\varphi) = d - 1$  then  $\rho_\varphi = \theta_d/2$ . If  $D(\varphi) = 0$  then  $\varphi = \{v\}$  for some vertex  $v \in \partial A$ , and  $\rho_\varphi$  equals the volume of  $B(v, r) \cap A$ , divided by  $r^d$ , for all sufficiently small  $r$ . If  $d = 2$ ,  $D(\varphi) = 0$  and  $\omega_\varphi$  denotes the angle subtended by  $A$  at the vertex  $\varphi$ , then  $\rho_\varphi = \omega_\varphi/2$ . If  $d = 3$  and  $D(\varphi) = 1$ , and  $\alpha_\varphi$  denotes the angle subtended by  $A$  at the edge  $\varphi$  (which is either the angle between the two boundary planes of  $A$  meeting at  $\varphi$ , or  $2\pi$  minus this angle), then  $\rho_\varphi = 2\alpha_\varphi/3$ .

Our result for  $A$  a polytope includes a condition that the polytope be convex; we conjecture that this condition is not needed. We include connectivity in the definition of a polytope, so for  $d = 1$  a polytope is defined to be an interval.

**Theorem 4.2** *Suppose  $A$  is a convex compact finite polytope in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ . If  $d \geq 4$ , assume moreover that  $A$  is convex. Assume that  $f|_A$  is continuous at  $x$  for all  $x \in \partial A$ , and set  $B = A$ . Assume  $k(\cdot)$  satisfies (4.1). Then, almost surely,*

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} nR_{n,k(n)}^d/k(n) = \max\left(\frac{1}{f_0\theta_d}, \max_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} \left(\frac{1}{f_\varphi\rho_\varphi}\right)\right), \quad \text{if } \beta = \infty; \tag{4.7}$$

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} nR_{n,k(n)}^d/\log n = \max\left(\frac{\hat{H}_\beta(1)}{f_0\theta_d}, \max_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} \left(\frac{\hat{H}_\beta(D(\varphi)/d)}{f_\varphi\rho_\varphi}\right)\right), \quad \text{if } \beta < \infty. \tag{4.8}$$

In the next three results, we spell out some special cases of Theorem 4.2.

**Corollary 4.3** *Suppose that  $d = 2$ ,  $A$  is a convex polygon with  $B = A$ , and  $f|_A$  is continuous at  $x$  for all  $x \in \partial A$ . Let  $V$  denote the set of vertices of  $A$ , and for  $v \in V$  let  $\omega_v$  denote the angle subtended by  $A$  at vertex  $v$ . Assume (4.1) with  $\beta < \infty$ . Then, almost surely,*

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(\frac{nR_{n,k(n)}^2}{\log n}\right) = \max\left(\frac{\hat{H}_\beta(1)}{\pi f_0}, \frac{2\hat{H}_\beta(1/2)}{\pi f_1}, \max_{v \in V} \left(\frac{2\beta}{\omega_v f(v)}\right)\right). \tag{4.9}$$

In particular, for any constant  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ ,  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( \frac{n\pi R_{n,k}^2}{\log n} \right) = \max \left( \frac{1}{f_0}, \frac{1}{f_1} \right) = \frac{1}{f_0}$ .

**Corollary 4.4** Suppose  $d = 3$  (so  $\theta_d = 4\pi/3$ ),  $A$  is a convex polyhedron with  $B = A$ , and  $f|_A$  is continuous at  $x$  for all  $x \in \partial A$ . Let  $V$  denote the set of vertices of  $A$ , and  $E$  the set of edges of  $A$ . For  $e \in E$ , let  $\alpha_e$  denote the angle subtended by  $A$  at edge  $e$ , and  $f_e$  the infimum of  $f$  over  $e$ . For  $v \in V$  let  $\rho_v$  denote the angular volume of vertex  $v$ . Suppose (4.1) holds with  $\beta < \infty$ . Then, almost surely,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( \frac{nR_{n,k(n)}^3}{\log n} \right) = \max \left( \frac{\hat{H}_\beta(1)}{\theta_3 f_0}, \frac{2\hat{H}_\beta(2/3)}{\theta_3 f_1}, \frac{3\hat{H}_\beta(1/3)}{2 \min_{e \in E}(\alpha_e f_e)}, \max_{v \in V} \left( \frac{\beta}{\rho_v f(v)} \right) \right).$$

In particular, if  $\beta = 0$  the above limit comes to  $\max \left( \frac{3}{4\pi f_0}, \frac{1}{\pi f_1}, \max_{e \in E} \left( \frac{1}{2\alpha_e f_e} \right) \right)$ .

**Corollary 4.5** Suppose  $A = B = [0, 1]^d$ , and  $f|_A$  is continuous at  $x$  for all  $x \in \partial A$ . For  $1 \leq j \leq d$  let  $\partial_j$  denote the union of all  $(d - j)$ -dimensional faces of  $A$ , and let  $f_j$  denote the infimum of  $f$  over  $\partial_j$ . Assume (4.1) with  $\beta < \infty$ . Then

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( \frac{nR_{n,k(n)}^d}{\log n} \right) = \max_{0 \leq j \leq d} \left( \frac{2^j \hat{H}_\beta(1 - j/d)}{\theta_d f_j} \right), \quad a.s. \tag{4.10}$$

It is perhaps worth spelling out what the preceding results mean in the special case where  $\beta = 0$  (for example, if  $k(n)$  is a constant) and also  $\mu$  is the uniform distribution on  $A$  (i.e.  $f(x) \equiv f_0$  on  $A$ ). In this case, the right hand side of (4.6) comes to  $(2 - 2/d)/f_0$ , while the right hand side of (4.8) comes to  $f_0^{-1} \max(1/\theta_d, \max_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} \frac{D(\varphi)}{(d\rho_\varphi)})$ . The limit in (4.9) comes to  $1/(\pi f_0)$ , while the limit in Corollary 4.4 comes to  $f_0^{-1} \max[1/\pi, \max_e(1/(2\alpha_e))]$ , and the right hand side of (4.10) comes to  $2^{d-1}/(\theta_d d)$ .

**Remark 4.6** The notion of coverage threshold is analogous to that of *connectivity threshold* in the theory of random geometric graphs [21]. Our results show that the threshold for full coverage by the balls  $B(X_i, r)$ , is asymptotically twice the threshold for the union of these balls to be connected, if  $A^o$  is connected, at least when  $A$  has a smooth boundary or  $A$  is a convex polytope. This can be seen from comparison of Theorem 4.1 above with [21, Theorem 13.7], and comparison of Corollary 4.5 above with [22, Theorem 2.5].

**Remark 4.7** We compare our results with [8]. In the setting of our Theorem 4.1, [8, Theorem 3] and [8, Remark 1] give an upper bound on  $\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} (n\theta_d R_n^d / \log n)$  of  $\max(f_0^{-1}, 2f_1^{-1})$  in probability or  $\max(2f_0^{-1}, 4f_1^{-1})$  almost surely. In the setting of our Theorem 4.2, they give an upper bound of  $f_0^{-1} \vee \max_\varphi(\theta_d / (f_\varphi \rho_\varphi))$  in probability, or twice this almost surely. Our (4.6) and (4.8) improve significantly on those results.

**Remark 4.8** In Theorem 4.2 we do not consider the case where  $A$  is a non-convex polytope. To generalize the proof of Lemma 6.12 to non-convex polytopes for general  $d$  would seem to require considerably more work.

Our final result is a law of large numbers for  $\tilde{R}_{n,k}$ , no longer requiring  $B = A$ . In the case where  $B$  is contained in the interior of  $A$ , this easily yields a law of large numbers for the  $k$ -coverage threshold  $R_{n,k}$ . Recall from Sect. 2 that  $\mu$  denotes the probability measure on  $A$  with density  $f$ .

**Proposition 4.9** *Suppose that either (i)  $B$  is compact and Riemann measurable with  $\mu(B) > 0$ , and  $B \subset A^\circ$ , and  $f$  is continuous on  $A$ ; or (ii)  $B = A$ . Assume (4.1) holds. Then, almost surely,*

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (n\theta_d \tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n)) = f_0^{-1} \quad \text{if } \beta = \infty; \tag{4.11}$$

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (n\theta_d \tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}^d / \log n) = \hat{H}_\beta(1) / f_0, \quad \text{if } \beta < \infty. \tag{4.12}$$

In particular, if  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  is a constant then

$$\mathbb{P}[\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (n\theta_d f_0 \tilde{R}_{n,k}^d / \log n) = 1] = 1. \tag{4.13}$$

In Case (i), all of the above almost sure limiting statements hold for  $R_{n,k(n)}$  as well as for  $\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}$ .

Proposition 4.9 has some overlap with known results; the uniform case with  $A = B = [0, 1]^d$  and  $f \equiv 1$  on  $A$  is covered by [10, Theorem 1]. Taking  $\mathbf{C}$  of that paper to be the class of Euclidean balls centred on the origin, we see that the quantity denoted  $M_{1,m}$  in [10] equals  $\tilde{R}_n$ . In [10, Example 3] it is stated that the Euclidean balls satisfy the conditions of [10, Theorem 3]. See also [17]. Note also that [15] has a result similar to the case of Proposition 4.9 where  $d = 2$ ,  $A = B = [0, 1]^2$  and  $f$  is uniform over  $A$ .

### 5 Strategy of proofs

We first give an overview of the strategy for the proofs, in Sect. 6, of the strong laws of large numbers that were stated in Sect. 4.

For  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  and  $p \in [0, 1]$  let  $\text{Bin}(n, p)$  denote a binomial random variable with parameters  $n, p$ . Recall that  $H(\cdot)$  was defined at (4.3), and  $Z_t$  is a Poisson( $t$ ) variable for  $t > 0$ . The proofs in Sect. 6 rely heavily on the following lemma.

**Lemma 5.1** (Chernoff bounds) *Suppose  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ ,  $p \in (0, 1)$ ,  $t > 0$  and  $0 < k < n$ .*

- (a) *If  $k \geq np$  then  $\mathbb{P}[\text{Bin}(n, p) \geq k] \leq \exp(-npH(k/(np)))$ .*
- (b) *If  $k \leq np$  then  $\mathbb{P}[\text{Bin}(n, p) \leq k] \leq \exp(-npH(k/(np)))$ .*
- (c) *If  $k \geq e^2 np$  then  $\mathbb{P}[\text{Bin}(n, p) \geq k] \leq \exp(-(k/2) \log(k/(np))) \leq e^{-k}$ .*
- (d) *If  $k < t$  then  $\mathbb{P}[Z_t \leq k] \leq \exp(-tH(k/t))$ .*
- (e) *If  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  then  $\mathbb{P}[Z_t = k] \geq (2\pi k)^{-1/2} e^{-1/(12k)} \exp(-tH(k/t))$ .*

**Proof** See e.g. [21, Lemmas 1.1, 1.2 and 1.3]. □

Recall that  $R_{n,k}$  is defined at (2.1), that we assume  $(k(n))_{n \geq 1}$  satisfies (4.1) for some  $\beta \in [0, \infty]$ , and that  $\hat{H}_\beta(x)$  is defined to be the  $y \geq \beta$  such that  $yH(\beta/y) = x$ , where  $H(\cdot)$  was defined at (4.3).

If  $f \equiv f_0$  on  $A$  for a constant  $f_0$ , and  $r > 0$ , then for  $x \in A^{(r)}$ ,  $\mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r))$  is binomial with mean  $nf_0\theta_d r^d =: M$ , say. Hence if  $M > k(n)$ , then parts (b) and (e) of Lemma 5.1 suggest that we should have

$$\mathbb{P}[\mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r)) < k(n)] \approx \exp(-MH(k(n)/M)).$$

If  $\beta < \infty$ , and we choose  $r = r_n$  so that  $M = a \log n$  with  $a = \hat{H}_\beta(1)$  this probability approximates to  $\exp(-a(\log n)H((\beta \log n)/(a \log n)))$ , which comes to  $n^{-1}$ . Since we can find  $n^{1+o(1)}$  disjoint balls of radius  $r_n$  where this might happen, this suggests  $a = \hat{H}_\beta(1)$  is the critical value of  $a := M/\log n$ , below which the interior region  $A^{(r_n)}$  is not covered ( $k(n)$  times) with high probability, and above which it is covered. We can then improve the ‘with high probability’ statement to an ‘almost surely for large enough  $n$ ’ statement using Lemma 6.1. If  $f$  is continuous but not constant on  $A$ , the value of  $f_0$  defined at (4.2) still determines the critical choice of  $a$ . If  $\beta = \infty$  instead, taking  $M = a'k(n)$  the critical value of  $a'$  is now 1. These considerations lead to Proposition 4.9.

Now consider the boundary region  $A \setminus A^{(r)}$ , in the case where  $\partial A$  is smooth. We can argue similarly to before, except that for  $x \in \partial A$  the approximate mean of  $\mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r))$  changes to  $nf_1\theta_d r^d/2 =: M'$ . If  $\beta < \infty$ , and we now choose  $r = r_n$  so  $M' = a' \log n$  with  $a' = \hat{H}_\beta(1 - 1/d)$ , then  $\mathbb{P}[\mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r_n)) < k(n)] \approx n^{-(1-1/d)}$ . Since we can find  $n^{1-1/d+o(1)}$  disjoint balls of radius  $r_n$  centred in  $A \setminus A^{(r_n)}$ , this suggests  $a' := \hat{H}_\beta(1 - 1/d)$  is the critical choice of  $a'$  for covering  $A \setminus A^{(r_n)}$ .

For polytopal  $A$  we consider covering the regions near to each of the lower dimensional faces of  $\partial A$  in an analogous way; the dimension of a face affects both the  $\mu$ -content of a ball centred on that face, and the number of disjoint balls that can be packed into the region near the face.

Next, we describe the strategy for the proof, in Sect. 7, of the weak convergence results that were stated in Sect. 3.

First, we shall provide a general ‘De-Poissonization’ lemma (Lemma 7.1), as a result of which for each of the Theorems in Sect. 3 it suffices to prove the results for a Poisson process rather than a binomial point process (i.e., for  $R'_{t,k}$  rather than for  $R_{n,k}$ ).

Next, we shall provide a general lemma (Lemma 7.2) giving the limiting probability of covering ( $k$  times, with  $k$  now fixed) a bounded region of  $\mathbb{R}^d$  by a spherical Poisson Boolean model (SPBM) on the whole of  $\mathbb{R}^d$ , in the limit of high intensity and small balls. This is based on results from [16] (or [12] if  $k = 1$ ). Applying Lemma 7.2 for an SPBM with all balls of the same radius yields a proof of Proposition 3.4.

Next, we shall consider the SPBM with balls of equal radius  $r_t$ , centred on a homogeneous Poisson process of intensity  $tf_0$  in a  $d$ -dimensional half-space. In the large- $t$  limit, with  $r_t$  shrinking in an appropriate way, in Lemma 7.4 we determine the limiting probability that a given bounded set within the surface of the half-space is covered, by applying Lemma 7.2 in  $d - 1$  dimensions, now with balls of varying

radii. Moreover we will show that the probability that a region in the half-space within distance  $r_t$  of that set is covered with the same limiting probability.

We can then complete the proof of Theorem 3.2 by applying Lemma 7.4 to determine the limiting probability that the region near the boundaries of a polygonal set  $A$  is covered, and Proposition 3.4 to determine the limiting probability that the interior region is covered, along with a separate argument to show the regions near the corners of polygonal  $A$  are covered with high probability.

For Theorem 3.3 we again use Proposition 3.4 to determine the limiting probability that the interior region is covered, and Lemma 7.4 to determine the limiting probability that the region near the faces (but not the edges) of polyhedral  $A$  are covered. To deal with the region near the edges of  $A$ , we also require a separate lemma (Lemma 7.10) determining the limiting probability that a bounded region near the edge of an infinite wedge-shaped region in  $\mathbb{R}^3$  is covered by an SPBM restricted to that wedge-shaped region.

The proof of Theorem 3.1 requires further ideas. Let  $\gamma \in (1/(2d), 1/d)$ . We shall work simultaneously on two length scales, namely the radius  $r_t$  satisfying (7.15) (and hence satisfying  $r_t = \Theta((\log t)/t)^{1/d}$ ), and a coarser length-scale given by  $t^{-\gamma}$ . If  $d = 2$ , we approximate to  $\partial A$  by a polygon of side-length that is  $\Theta(t^{-\gamma})$ . We approximate to  $\mathcal{P}_t$  by a Poisson process inside the polygon, and can determine the asymptotic probability of complete coverage of this approximating polygon by considering a lower-dimensional Boolean model on each of the edges. In fact we shall line up these edges by means rigid motions, into a line segment embedded in the plane; in the limit we obtain the limiting probability of covering this line segment with balls centred on a Poisson process in the half-space to one side of this line segment, which we know about by Lemma 7.4. By separate estimates we can show that the error terms either from the corners of the polygon, or from the approximation of Poisson processes, are negligible in the large- $t$  limit.

For  $d \geq 3$  we would like to approximate to  $A$  by a polyhedral set  $A_t$  obtained by taking its surface to be a triangulation of the surface of  $A$  with side-lengths  $\Theta(t^{-\gamma})$ . However, two obstacles to this strategy present themselves.

The first obstacle is that in 3 or more dimensions, it is harder to be globally explicit about the set  $A_t$  and the set difference  $A \Delta A_t$ . We deal with this by triangulating  $\partial A$  locally rather than globally; we break  $\partial A$  into finitely many pieces, each of which lies within a single chart within which  $\partial A$ , after a rotation, can be expressed as the graph of a  $C^2$  function on a region  $U$  in  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ . Then we triangulate  $U$  (in the sense of tessellating it into simplices) explicitly and use this to determine an explicit local triangulation (in the sense of approximating the curved surface by a union of  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional simplices) of  $\partial A$ .

The second obstacle is that the simplices in the triangulation cannot in general be reassembled into a  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cube. To get around this, we shall pick  $\gamma' \in (\gamma, 1/d)$  and subdivide these simplices into smaller  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes of side  $t^{-\gamma'}$ ; we can reassemble these smaller  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes into a cube in  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ , and control the boundary region near the boundaries of the smaller  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes, or near the boundary of the simplices, by separate estimates.

## 6 Proof of strong laws of large numbers

In this section we prove the results stated in Sect. 4. Throughout this section we are assuming we are given a constant  $\beta \in [0, \infty]$  and a sequence  $(k(n))_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$  satisfying (4.1). Recall that  $\mu$  denotes the distribution of  $X_1$ , and this has a density  $f$  with support  $A$ , and that  $B \subset A$  is fixed, and  $R_{n,k}$  is defined at (2.1).

We shall repeatedly use the following lemma. It is based on what in [21] was called the ‘subsequence trick’. This result says that if an array of random variables  $U_{n,k}$  is monotone in  $n$  and  $k$ , and  $U_{n,k(n)}$ , properly scaled, converges in probability to a constant at rate  $n^{-\varepsilon}$ , one may be able to improve this to almost sure convergence.

**Lemma 6.1** (Subsequence trick) *Suppose  $(U_{n,k}, (n, k) \in \mathbb{N} \times \mathbb{N})$  is an array of random variables on a common probability space such that  $U_{n,k}$  is nonincreasing in  $n$  and nondecreasing in  $k$ , that is,  $U_{n+1,k} \leq U_{n,k} \leq U_{n,k+1}$  almost surely, for all  $(n, k) \in \mathbb{N} \times \mathbb{N}$ . Let  $\beta \in [0, \infty)$ ,  $\varepsilon > 0$ ,  $c > 0$ , and suppose  $(k(n), n \in \mathbb{N})$  is an  $\mathbb{N}$ -valued sequence such that  $k(n)/\log n \rightarrow \beta$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ .*

- (a) *Suppose  $\mathbb{P}[nU_{n, \lfloor (\beta + \varepsilon) \log n \rfloor} > \log n] \leq cn^{-\varepsilon}$ , for all but finitely many  $n$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} nU_{n, k(n)}/\log n \leq 1] = 1$ .*
- (b) *Suppose  $\varepsilon < \beta$  and  $\mathbb{P}[nU_{n, \lceil (\beta - \varepsilon) \log n \rceil} \leq \log n] \leq cn^{-\varepsilon}$ , for all but finitely many  $n$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} nU_{n, k(n)}/\log n \geq 1] = 1$ .*

**Proof** (a) For each  $n$  set  $k'(n) := \lfloor (\beta + \varepsilon) \log n \rfloor$ . Pick  $K \in \mathbb{N}$  with  $K\varepsilon > 1$ . Then by our assumption, we have for all large enough  $n$  that  $\mathbb{P}[n^K U_{n^k, k'(n^k)} > \log(n^K)] \leq cn^{-K\varepsilon}$ , which is summable in  $n$ . Therefore by the Borel-Cantelli lemma, there exists a random but almost surely finite  $N$  such that for all  $n \geq N$  we have

$$n^K U_{n^k, k'(n^k)} \leq \log(n^K),$$

and also  $k(m) \leq (\beta + \varepsilon/2) \log m$  for all  $m \geq N^K$ , and moreover  $(\beta + \varepsilon/2) \log((n + 1)^K) \leq (\beta + \varepsilon) \log(n^K)$  for all  $n \geq N$ . Now for  $m \in \mathbb{N}$  with  $m \geq N^K$ , choose  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  such that  $n^K \leq m < (n + 1)^K$ . Then

$$k(m) \leq (\beta + \varepsilon/2) \log((n + 1)^K) \leq (\beta + \varepsilon) \log(n^K),$$

so  $k(m) \leq k'(n^K)$ . Since  $U_{m,k}$  is nonincreasing in  $m$  and nondecreasing in  $k$ ,

$$mU_{m, k(m)}/\log m \leq (n + 1)^K U_{n^k, k'(n^k)}/\log(n^K) \leq (1 + n^{-1})^K,$$

which gives us the result asserted.

(b) The proof is similar to that of (a), and is omitted. □

### 6.1 General lower and upper bounds

In this subsection we present asymptotic lower and upper bounds on  $R_{n,k(n)}$ , not requiring any extra assumptions on  $A$  and  $B$ . In fact,  $A$  here can be any metric space

endowed with a probability measure  $\mu$ , and  $B$  can be any subset of  $A$ . The definition of  $R_{n,k}$  at (2.1) carries over in an obvious way to this general setting.

Later, we shall derive the results stated in Sect. 4 by applying the results of this subsection to the different regions within  $A$  (namely interior, boundary, and lower-dimensional faces).

Given  $r > 0, a > 0$ , define the ‘packing number’  $\nu(B, r, a)$  be the largest number  $m$  such that there exists a collection of  $m$  disjoint closed balls of radius  $r$  centred on points of  $B$ , each with  $\mu$ -measure at most  $a$ . The proof of the following lemma implements, for a general metric space, the strategy outlined in Sect. 5.

**Lemma 6.2** (General lower bound) *Let  $a > 0, b \geq 0$ . Suppose  $\nu(B, r, ar^d) = \Omega(r^{-b})$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ . Then, almost surely, if  $\beta = \infty$  then  $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} (nR_{n,k(n)}^d/k(n)) \geq 1/a$ . If  $\beta < \infty$  then  $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} (nR_{n,k(n)}^d/\log n) \geq a^{-1} \hat{H}_\beta(b/d)$ , almost surely.*

**Proof** First suppose  $\beta = \infty$ . Let  $u \in (0, 1/a)$ . Set  $r_n := (uk(n)/n)^{1/d}, n \in \mathbb{N}$ . By (4.1),  $r_n \rightarrow 0$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ . Then, given  $n$  sufficiently large, we have  $\nu(B, r_n, ar_n^d) > 0$  so we can find  $x \in B$  such that  $\mu(B(x, r_n)) \leq ar_n^d$ , and hence  $n\mu(B(x, r_n)) \leq auk(n)$ . If  $k(n) \leq e^2n\mu(B(x, r_n))$  (and hence  $n\mu(B(x, r_n)) \geq e^{-2}k(n)$ ), then since  $\mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r_n))$  is binomial with parameters  $n$  and  $\mu(B(x, r_n))$ , by Lemma 5.1(a) we have that

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[R_{n,k(n)} \leq r_n] &\leq \mathbb{P}[\mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r_n)) \geq k(n)] \leq \exp\left(-n\mu(B(x, r_n))H\left(\frac{k(n)}{n\mu(B(x, r_n))}\right)\right) \\ &\leq \exp(-e^{-2}k(n)H((au)^{-1})), \end{aligned}$$

while if  $k(n) > e^2n\mu(B(x, r_n))$  then by Lemma 5.1(c),  $\mathbb{P}[R_{n,k(n)} \leq r_n] \leq e^{-k(n)}$ . Therefore  $\mathbb{P}[R_{n,k(n)} \leq r_n]$  is summable in  $n$  because we assume here that  $k(n)/\log n \rightarrow \infty$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ . Thus by the Borel-Cantelli lemma, almost surely  $R_{n,k(n)} > r_n$  for all but finitely many  $n$ , and hence  $\liminf nR_{n,k(n)}^d/k(n) \geq u$ . This gives the result for  $\beta = \infty$ .

Now suppose instead that  $\beta < \infty$  and  $b = 0$ , so that  $\hat{H}_\beta(b/d) = \beta$ . Assume that  $\beta > 0$  (otherwise the result is trivial). Let  $\beta' \in (0, \beta)$ . Let  $\delta > 0$  with  $\beta' < \beta - \delta$  and with  $\beta'H\left(\frac{\beta-\delta}{\beta'}\right) > \delta$ . For  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ , set  $r_n := ((\beta' \log n)/(an))^{1/d}$  and set  $k'(n) = \lceil (\beta - \delta) \log n \rceil$ . By assumption  $\nu(B, r_n, ar_n^d) = \Omega(1)$ , so for all  $n$  large enough, we can (and do) choose  $x_n \in B$  such that  $n\mu(B(x_n, r_n)) \leq nar_n^d = \beta' \log n$ . Then by a simple coupling, and Lemma 5.1(a),

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[\mathcal{X}_n(B(x_n, r_n)) \geq k'(n)] &\leq \mathbb{P}[\text{Bin}(n, (\beta' \log n)/n) \geq k'(n)] \\ &\leq \exp\left(-(\beta' \log n)H\left(\frac{\beta - \delta}{\beta'}\right)\right) \leq n^{-\delta}. \end{aligned}$$

Hence  $\mathbb{P}[nR_{n,k'(n)}^d \leq (\beta'/a) \log n] = \mathbb{P}[R_{n,k'(n)} \leq r_n] \leq n^{-\delta}$ . Then by the subsequence trick (Lemma 6.1(b)), we may deduce that  $\liminf (nR_{n,k(n)}^d/\log n) \geq \beta'/a$ , almost surely, which gives us the result for this case.



Now suppose instead that  $\beta < \infty$  and  $b > 0$ . Let  $u \in (0, a^{-1}\hat{H}_\beta(b/d))$ , so that  $uaH(\beta/ua) < b/d$ . Choose  $\varepsilon > 0$  such that  $(1 + \varepsilon)uaH(\beta/ua) < (b/d) - 9\varepsilon$ .

For each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  set  $r_n = (u(\log n)/n)^{1/d}$ . Let  $m_n := \nu(B, r_n, ar_n^d)$ , and choose  $x_{n,1}, \dots, x_{n,m_n} \in B$  such that the balls  $B(x_{n,1}, r_n), \dots, B(x_{n,m_n}, r_n)$  are pairwise disjoint and each have  $\mu$ -measure at most  $ar_n^d$ . Set  $\lambda(n) := n + n^{3/4}$ . For  $1 \leq i \leq m_n$ , if  $k(n) > 1$  then by a simple coupling, and Lemma 5.1(e),

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[\mathcal{P}_{\lambda(n)}(B(x_{n,i}, r_n)) \leq k(n) - 1] &\geq \mathbb{P}[Z_{\lambda(n)ar_n^d} \leq k(n) - 1] \\ &\geq \left( \frac{e^{-1/(12(k(n)-1))}}{\sqrt{2\pi(k(n)-1)}} \right) \exp\left( -\lambda(n)ar_n^d H\left( \frac{k(n)-1}{\lambda(n)ar_n^d} \right) \right). \end{aligned}$$

Now  $\lambda(n)r_n^d/\log n \rightarrow u$  so by (4.1),  $(k(n) - 1)/(\lambda(n)ar_n^d) \rightarrow \beta/ua$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ . Thus by the continuity of  $H(\cdot)$ , provided  $n$  is large enough and  $k(n) > 1$ , for  $1 \leq i \leq m_n$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[\mathcal{P}_{\lambda(n)}(B(x_{n,i}, r_n)) \leq k(n) - 1] \\ \geq \left( \frac{e^{-1/12}}{\sqrt{2\pi(\beta + 1) \log n}} \right) \exp\left( -(1 + \varepsilon)auH\left( \frac{\beta}{au} \right) \log n \right). \end{aligned} \tag{6.1}$$

If  $k(n) = 1$  for infinitely many  $n$ , then  $\beta = 0$  and (6.1) still holds for large enough  $n$ .

By (6.1) and our choice of  $\varepsilon$ , there is a constant  $c > 0$  such that for all large enough  $n$  and all  $i \in \{1, \dots, m_n\}$  we have

$$\mathbb{P}[\mathcal{P}_{\lambda(n)}(B(x_{n,i}, r_n)) \leq k(n) - 1] \geq c(\log n)^{-1/2}n^{9\varepsilon-b/d} \geq n^{8\varepsilon-b/d}.$$

Hence, setting  $E_n := \bigcap_{i=1}^{m_n} \{\mathcal{P}_{\lambda(n)}(B(x_{n,i}, r_n)) \geq k(n)\}$ , for all large enough  $n$  we have

$$\mathbb{P}[E_n] \leq (1 - n^{8\varepsilon-b/d})^{m_n} \leq \exp(-m_n n^{8\varepsilon-b/d}).$$

By assumption  $m_n = \nu(B, r_n, ar_n^d) = \Omega(r_n^{-b})$  so that for large enough  $n$  we have  $m_n \geq n^{(b/d)-\varepsilon}$ , and therefore  $\mathbb{P}[E_n]$  is summable in  $n$ .

By Lemma 5.1(d), and Taylor expansion of  $H(x)$  about  $x = 1$  (see the print version of [21, Lemma 1.4] for details; there may be a typo in the electronic version), for all  $n$  large enough  $\mathbb{P}[Z_{\lambda(n)} < n] \leq \exp(-\frac{1}{9}n^{1/2})$ , which is summable in  $n$ . Since  $R_{m,k}$  is nonincreasing in  $m$ , by the union bound

$$\mathbb{P}[R_{n,k(n)} \leq r_n] \leq \mathbb{P}[R_{Z_{\lambda(n)},k(n)} \leq r_n] + \mathbb{P}[Z_{\lambda(n)} < n] \leq \mathbb{P}[E_n] + \mathbb{P}[Z_{\lambda(n)} < n],$$

which is summable in  $n$  by the preceding estimates. Therefore by the Borel-Cantelli lemma,

$$\mathbb{P}[\liminf (nR_{n,k(n)}^d/\log n) \geq u] = 1, \quad u < a^{-1}\hat{H}_\beta(b/d),$$

so the result follows for this case too. □

Given  $r > 0$ , and  $D \subset A$ , define the ‘covering number’

$$\kappa(D, r) := \min\{m \in \mathbb{N} : \exists x_1, \dots, x_m \in D \text{ with } D \subset \cup_{i=1}^m B(x_i, r)\}. \tag{6.2}$$

We need a complementary upper bound to go with the preceding asymptotic lower bound on  $R_{n,k(n)}$ . For this, we shall require a condition on the ‘covering number’ that is roughly dual to the condition on ‘packing number’ used in Lemma 6.2. Also, instead of stating the lemma in terms of  $R_{n,k}$  directly, it is more convenient to state it in terms of the ‘fully covered’ region  $F_{n,k,r}$ , defined for  $n, k \in \mathbb{N}$  and  $r > 0$  by

$$F_{n,k,r} := \{x \in A : \mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r)) \geq k\}. \tag{6.3}$$

We can characterise the event  $\{\tilde{R}_{n,k} \leq r\}$  in terms of the set  $F_{n,k,r}$  as follows:

$$\tilde{R}_{n,k} \leq r \text{ if and only if } (B \cap A^{(r)}) \subset F_{n,k,r}. \tag{6.4}$$

Indeed, the ‘if’ part of this statement is clear from (2.3). For the ‘only if’ part, note that if there exists  $x \in (B \cap A^{(r)}) \setminus F_{n,k,r}$ , then there exists  $s > r$  with  $x \in B \cap A^{(s)} \setminus F_{n,k,s}$ . Then for all  $s' < s$  we have  $x \in B \cap A^{(s')} \setminus F_{n,k,s}$ , and therefore  $\tilde{R}_{n,k} \geq s > r$ .

**Lemma 6.3** (General upper bound) *Suppose  $r_0, a, b \in (0, \infty)$ , and a family of sets  $A_r \subset A$ , defined for  $0 < r < r_0$ , are such that for all  $r \in (0, r_0)$ ,  $x \in A_r$  and  $s \in (0, r)$  we have  $\mu(B(x, s)) \geq as^d$ , and moreover  $\kappa(A_r, r) = O(r^{-b})$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ .*

*If  $\beta = \infty$  then let  $u > 1/a$  and set  $r_n = (uk(n)/n)^{1/d}$ ,  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ . Then with probability one,  $A_{r_n} \subset F_{n,k(n),r_n}$  for all large enough  $n$ .*

*If  $\beta < \infty$ , let  $u > a^{-1} \hat{H}_\beta(b/d)$  and set  $r_n = (u(\log n)/n)^{1/d}$ . Then there exists  $\varepsilon > 0$  such that  $\mathbb{P}[\{A_{r_n} \subset F_{n,[(\beta+\varepsilon)\log n],r_n}\}^c] = O(n^{-\varepsilon})$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** Let  $\varepsilon \in (0, 1)$ ; if  $\beta = \infty$ , assume  $a(1 - \varepsilon)^d u > 1 + \varepsilon$ . If  $\beta < \infty$ , assume

$$a(1 - \varepsilon)^d u H((\beta + \varepsilon)/(a(1 - \varepsilon)^d u)) > (b/d) + \varepsilon.$$

This can be achieved because  $auH(\beta/(au)) > b/d$  in this case. Set  $m_n = \kappa(A_{r_n}, \varepsilon r_n)$ . Then  $m_n = O(r_n^{-b}) = O(n^{b/d})$  (in either case). Let  $x_{n,1}, \dots, x_{n,m_n} \in A_{r_n}$  with  $A_{r_n} \subset \cup_{i=1}^{m_n} B(x_{n,i}, \varepsilon r_n)$ . Then for  $1 \leq i \leq m_n$ , if  $\mathcal{X}_n(B(x_{n,i}, (1 - \varepsilon)r_n)) \geq k(n)$  then  $B(x_{n,i}, \varepsilon r_n) \subset F_{n,k(n),r_n}$ . Therefore

$$\mathbb{P}[\{A_{r_n} \subset F_{n,k(n),r_n}\}^c] \leq \mathbb{P}[\cup_{i=1}^{m_n} \{\mathcal{X}_n(B(x_{n,i}, (1 - \varepsilon)r_n)) < k(n)\}]. \tag{6.5}$$

Suppose  $\beta = \infty$ . Then for  $1 \leq i \leq m_n$ ,

$$n\mu(B(x_{n,i}, (1 - \varepsilon)r_n)) \geq na((1 - \varepsilon)r_n)^d \geq (1 + \varepsilon)k(n),$$

so that by (6.5), the union bound, and Lemma 5.1(b),

$$\mathbb{P}[\{A_{r_n} \subset F_{n,k(n),r_n}\}^c] \leq m_n \mathbb{P}[\text{Bin}(n, (1 + \varepsilon)k(n)/n) < k(n)]$$

$$\leq m_n \exp(-(1 + \varepsilon)k(n)H((1 + \varepsilon)^{-1})).$$

This is summable in  $n$ , since  $m_n = O(n^{b/d})$  and  $k(n)/\log n \rightarrow \infty$ . Therefore by the first Borel-Cantelli lemma, we obtain the desired conclusion for this case.

Now suppose instead that  $\beta < \infty$ . Then

$$n\mu(B(x_{n,i}, (1 - \varepsilon)r_n)) \geq na((1 - \varepsilon)r_n)^d \geq a(1 - \varepsilon)^d u \log n.$$

Therefore setting  $k'(n) := \lfloor (\beta + \varepsilon) \log n \rfloor$ , by (6.5) we have

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[\{A_{r_n} \subset F_{n,k'(n),r_n}\}^c] &\leq m_n \exp\left(-a(1 - \varepsilon)^d u H\left(\frac{(\beta + \varepsilon)}{a(1 - \varepsilon)^d u}\right) \log n\right) \\ &\leq m_n n^{-(b/d)-\varepsilon}, \end{aligned}$$

which yields the desired conclusion for this case. □

### 6.2 Proof of Proposition 4.9

Throughout this subsection we assume that either: (i)  $B$  is compact and Riemann measurable with  $\mu(B) > 0$  and  $B \subset A^o$ , or (ii)  $B = A$ . We do not (yet) assume  $f$  is continuous on  $A$ . Recall from (4.2) that  $f_0 := \text{ess inf}_{x \in B} f(x)$ .

We shall prove Proposition 4.9 by applying (6.4) and Lemma 6.3 to derive an upper bound on  $\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}$  (Lemma 6.6), and Lemma 6.2 to derive a lower bound (Lemma 6.5). For the lower bound we also require the following lemma (recall that  $v(B, r, a)$  was defined just before Lemma 6.2).

**Lemma 6.4** *Let  $\alpha > f_0$ . Then  $\liminf_{r \downarrow 0} r^d v(B, r, \alpha\theta_d r^d) > 0$ .*

**Proof** Let  $\kappa = 3^{-d}\theta_d$ . Note that  $0 < \kappa < 1$ . Set

$$\alpha' := \alpha\kappa/4 + f_0(1 - \kappa/4).$$

By the Riemann measurability assumption,  $\text{ess inf}_{B^{(\delta)}}(f) \downarrow f_0$  as  $\varepsilon \downarrow 0$ . Therefore we can and do choose  $\delta > 0$  with  $\mu(B^{(\delta)}) > 0$  and with  $\text{ess inf}_{B^{(\delta)}}(f) < \alpha'$ .

Note that  $f_0 < \alpha' < \alpha$ . Let  $x_0 \in B^{(\delta)}$  with  $f(x_0) < \alpha'$  and  $x_0$  a Lebesgue point of  $f$ . Then take  $r_0 \in (0, \delta)$  such that  $\mu(B(x_0, r_0)) < \alpha'\theta_d r_0^d$ .

For  $r > 0$  sufficiently small, we can and do take a collection of disjoint balls  $B(x_{r,1}, r), \dots, B(x_{r,\sigma'(r)}, r)$ , all contained in  $B(x_0, r_0)$ , with  $\sigma'(r) > (\kappa/2)(r_0/r)^d$ . Indeed, we can take  $(1 + o(1))\theta_d r_0^d (3r)^{-d}$  [as  $r \downarrow 0$ ] disjoint cubes of side  $3r$  inside  $B(x_0, r_0)$  and can take a closed ball of radius  $r$  inside the interior of each of these cubes.

Given small  $r$ , write  $B_i$  for  $B(x_{r,i}, r)$  and  $B_0$  for  $B(x_0, r_0)$ . Suppose fewer than half of the balls  $B_i, 1 \leq i \leq \sigma'(r)$  satisfy  $\mu(B_i) \leq \alpha\theta_d r^d$ . Then more than half of them satisfy  $\mu(B_i) > \alpha\theta_d r^d$ . Let  $D$  denote the union of the latter collection of balls. Denoting volume by  $|\cdot|$ , we have  $\mu(D) \geq \alpha|D|$  and  $\mu(B_0 \setminus D) \geq f_0|B_0 \setminus D|$ , and

$$|D| \geq (1/2)\sigma'(r)\theta_d r^d \geq (\kappa/4)\theta_d r^d = (\kappa/4)|B_0|.$$

Then

$$\frac{\mu(B_0)}{|B_0|} \geq \alpha \frac{|D|}{|B_0|} + f_0 \left(1 - \frac{|D|}{|B_0|}\right) \geq \alpha',$$

which contradicts our original assumption about  $r_0$ . Therefore at least half of the balls  $B_i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq \sigma'(r)$  satisfy  $\mu(B_i) \leq \alpha\theta_d r^d$ . Thus  $\nu(B, r, \alpha\theta_d r^d) \geq \sigma'(r)/2$ .  $\square$

**Lemma 6.5** *It is the case that*

$$\mathbb{P}[\liminf(n\theta_d \tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}^d/k(n)) \geq 1/f_0] = 1 \quad \text{if } \beta = \infty; \tag{6.6}$$

$$\mathbb{P}[\liminf(n\theta_d \tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}^d/\log n) \geq \hat{H}_\beta(1)/f_0] = 1 \quad \text{if } \beta < \infty. \tag{6.7}$$

**Proof** Let  $\alpha' > \alpha > f_0$ . Set  $r_n := (k(n)/(n\theta_d\alpha'))^{1/d}$  if  $\beta = \infty$ , and set  $r_n := (\hat{H}_\beta(1)(\log n)/(n\theta_d\alpha'))^{1/d}$  if  $\beta < \infty$ .

Assume for now that  $B$  is compact with  $B \subset A^\circ$ , so that there exists  $\delta > 0$  such that  $B \subset A^{(\delta)}$ . Then, even if  $f$  is not continuous on  $A$ , we can find  $x_0 \in B$  with  $f(x_0) < \alpha$ , such that  $x_0$  is a Lebesgue point of  $f$ . Then for all small enough  $r > 0$  we have  $\mu(B(x_0, r)) < \alpha\theta_d r^d$ , so that  $\nu(B, r, \alpha\theta_d r^d) = \Omega(1)$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ .

If  $\beta = \infty$ , then by Lemma 6.2 (taking  $b = 0$ ),  $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} nR_{n,k(n)}^d/k(n) \geq (\theta_d\alpha)^{-1}$ , almost surely. Hence for all large enough  $n$  we have  $R_{n,k(n)} > r_n$ ; provided  $n$  is also large enough so that  $r_n < \delta$  we also have  $\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)} > r_n$ , and (6.6) follows.

Suppose instead that  $\beta < \infty$ . Then by Lemma 6.4,  $\nu(B, r, \alpha\theta_d r^d) = \Omega(r^{-d})$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ . Hence by Lemma 6.2, almost surely  $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} (nR_{n,k(n)}^d/\log n) \geq (\alpha\theta_d)^{-1} \hat{H}_\beta(1)$ , and hence for large enough  $n$  we have  $R_{n,k(n)} > r_n$  and also  $\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)} > r_n$ , which yields (6.7).

Finally, suppose instead that  $B = A$ . Then by using e.g. [21, Lemma 11.12] we can find compact, Riemann measurable  $B' \subset A^\circ$  with  $\mu(B') > 0$  and  $\text{ess inf}_{x \in B'} f(x) < \alpha$ . Define  $S_{n,k}$  to be the smallest  $r \geq 0$  such that every point in  $B'$  is covered at least  $k$  times by balls of radius  $r$  centred on points of  $\mathcal{X}_n$ . By the argument already given we have almost surely for all large enough  $n$  that  $S_{n,k(n)} > r_n$  and also  $B' \subset A^{(r_n)}$ . For such  $n$ , there exists  $x \in B' \subset B \cap A^{(r_n)}$  with  $\mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r_n)) < k(n)$ , and hence by (6.4),  $\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)} > r_n$ , which gives us (6.6) and (6.7) in this case too.  $\square$

Now and for the rest of this subsection, we do assume in case (i) (with  $B \subset A^\circ$ ) that  $f$  is continuous on  $A$ .

**Lemma 6.6** *Suppose that  $f_0 > 0$ . Then almost surely*

$$\limsup(n\theta_d \tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}^d/k(n)) \leq 1/f_0, \quad \text{if } \beta = \infty; \tag{6.8}$$

$$\limsup(n\theta_d \tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}^d/\log n) \leq \hat{H}_\beta(1)/f_0, \quad \text{if } \beta < \infty. \tag{6.9}$$

**Proof** We shall apply Lemma 6.3, here taking  $A_r = B \cap A^{(r)}$ . To start, we claim that

$$\liminf_{r \downarrow 0} \inf_{x \in B \cap A^{(r)}, s \in (0,r)} \left( \frac{\mu(B(x, s))}{\theta_d s^d} \right) \geq f_0. \tag{6.10}$$

This follows from the definition (4.2) of  $f_0$  when  $B = A$ . In the other case (with  $B \subset A^o$ ) it follows from (4.2) and the assumed continuity of  $f$  on  $A$ .

Suppose  $f_0 < \infty$  and let  $\delta \in (0, f_0)$ . It is easy to see that  $\kappa(B \cap A^{(r)}, r) = O(r^{-d})$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ . Together with (6.10), this shows that the hypotheses of Lemma 6.3 (taking  $A_r = B \cap A^{(r)}$ ) apply with  $a = \theta_d(f_0 - \delta)$  and  $b = d$ . Hence by (6.4) and Lemma 6.3, if  $\beta = \infty$  then for any  $u > (\theta_d(f_0 - \delta))^{-1}$ , we have almost surely for large enough  $n$  that  $\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)} \leq (uk(n)/n)^{1/d}$ , and (6.8) follows.

If  $\beta < \infty$ , then by (6.4) and Lemma 6.3, given  $u > \hat{H}_\beta(1)/(\theta_d(f_0 - \delta))$ , there exists  $\varepsilon > 0$  such that, setting  $k'(n) := \lfloor (\beta + \varepsilon) \log n \rfloor$  and  $r_n := (u(\log n)/n)^{1/d}$ , we have

$$\mathbb{P}[n\tilde{R}_{n,k'(n)}^d > u \log n] = \mathbb{P}[\tilde{R}_{n,k'(n)} > r_n] = \mathbb{P}[\{B \cap A^{(r_n)} \subset F_{n,k'(n),r_n}\}^c] = O(n^{-\varepsilon}).$$

Therefore by Lemma 6.1, which is applicable since  $\tilde{R}_{n,k}^d/u$  is nonincreasing in  $n$  and nondecreasing in  $k$ , we obtain that  $\limsup(n\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}^d/\log n) \leq u$ , almost surely. Since  $u > \hat{H}_\beta(1)/(\theta_d(f_0 - \delta))$  and  $\delta \in (0, f_0)$  are arbitrary, we therefore obtain (6.9).  $\square$

**Proof of Proposition 4.9** Under either hypothesis ((i) or (ii)), it is immediate from Lemmas 6.5 and 6.6 that (4.11) holds if  $\beta = \infty$  and (4.12) holds if  $\beta < \infty$ .

It follows that almost surely  $\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)} \rightarrow 0$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ , and therefore if we are in Case (i) (with  $B \subset A^o$ ) we have  $\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)} = R_{n,k(n)}$  for all large enough  $n$ . Therefore in this case (4.11) (if  $\beta = \infty$ ) or (4.12) (if  $\beta < \infty$ ) still holds with  $\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}$  replaced by  $R_{n,k(n)}$ .  $\square$

### 6.3 Proof of Theorem 4.1

In this section and again later on, we shall use certain results from [21], which rely on an alternative characterization of  $A$  having a  $C^2$  boundary, given in the next lemma. Recall that  $S \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  is called a  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional *submanifold* of  $\mathbb{R}^d$  if there exists a collection of pairs  $(U_i, \phi_i)$ , where  $\{U_i\}$  is a collection of open sets in  $\mathbb{R}^d$  whose union contains  $S$ , and  $\phi_i$  is a  $C^2$  diffeomorphism of  $U_i$  onto an open set in  $\mathbb{R}^d$  with the property that  $\phi_i(U_i \cap S) = \phi_i(U_i) \cap (\mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times \{0\})$ . The pairs  $(U_i, \phi_i)$  are called *charts*. We shall sometimes also refer to the sets  $U_i$  as charts here.

**Lemma 6.7** *Suppose  $A \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  has a  $C^2$  boundary. Then  $\partial A$  is a  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional  $C^2$  submanifold of  $\mathbb{R}^d$ .*

**Proof** Let  $x \in \partial A$ . Let  $U$  be an open neighbourhood of  $x$ ,  $V \subset \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  an open set, and  $\rho$  a rotation on  $\mathbb{R}^d$  about  $x$  such that  $\rho(\partial A \cap U) = \{(w, f(w)) : w \in V\}$ , and moreover  $\rho(U) \subset V \times \mathbb{R}$ . Then for  $(w, z) \in U$  (with  $w \in V$  and  $z \in \mathbb{R}$ ), take  $\psi(w, z) = (w, z - f(w))$ . Then  $\psi \circ \rho$  is a  $C^2$  diffeomorphism from  $U$  to  $\psi \circ \rho(U)$ , with the property that  $\psi \circ \rho(U \cap \partial A) = \psi \circ \rho(U) \cap (\mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times \{0\})$ , as required.  $\square$

**Remark 6.8** The converse to Lemma 6.7 also holds: if  $\partial A$  is a  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional submanifold of  $\mathbb{R}^d$  then  $A$  has a  $C^2$  boundary in the sense that we have defined it. The proof of this this implication is more involved, and not needed in the sequel, so we omit the argument.

We shall use the following lemma here and again later on.

**Lemma 6.9** *Suppose  $A \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  is compact, and has  $C^2$  boundary. Given  $\varepsilon > 0$ , there exists  $\delta > 0$  such that for all  $x \in A$  and  $s \in (0, \delta)$ , we have  $|B(x, s) \cap A| > (1 - \varepsilon)\theta_d s^d / 2$ .*

**Proof** Immediate from applying first Lemma 6.7, and then [21, Lemma 5.7]. □

Recall that  $F_{n,k,r}$  was defined at (6.3). We introduce a new variable  $R_{n,k,1}$ , which is the smallest radius  $r$  of balls required to cover  $k$  times the boundary region  $A \setminus A^{(r)}$ :

$$R_{n,k,1} := \inf\{r > 0 : A \setminus A^{(r)} \subset F_{n,k,r}\}, \quad n, k \in \mathbb{N}. \tag{6.11}$$

Loosely speaking, the 1 in the subscript refers to the fact that this boundary region is in some sense  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional. For all  $n, k$ , we claim that

$$R_{n,k} = \max(\tilde{R}_{n,k}, R_{n,k,1}), \quad \text{if } B = A. \tag{6.12}$$

Indeed, if  $r > R_{n,k}$  then  $A \subset F_{n,k,r}$  so that  $A^{(r)} \subset F_{n,k,r}$  and  $A \setminus A^{(r)} \subset F_{n,k,r}$ , and hence  $r \geq \max(\tilde{R}_{n,k}, R_{n,k,1})$ ; hence,  $R_{n,k} \geq \max(\tilde{R}_{n,k}, R_{n,k,1})$ . For an inequality the other way, suppose  $r > \max(\tilde{R}_{n,k}, R_{n,k,1})$ ; then by (2.3), there exists  $r' < r$  with  $A^{(r')} \subset F_{n,k,r'}$ , and hence also  $A^{(r)} \subset F_{n,k,r}$ . Moreover by (6.11) there exists  $s < r$  with  $A \setminus A^{(s)} \subset F_{n,k,s}$ . Now suppose  $x \in A^{(s)} \setminus A^{(r)}$ . Let  $z \in \partial A$  with  $\|z - x\| = \text{dist}(x, \partial A) \in (s, r]$ . Let  $y \in [x, z]$  with  $\|y - z\| = s$ . Then  $y \in A \setminus A^{(s)}$ , so that  $y \in F_{n,k,s}$ , and also  $\|x - y\| \leq r - s$ . This implies that  $x \in F_{n,k,r}$ . Therefore  $A^{(s)} \setminus A^{(r)} \subset F_{n,k,r}$ . Combined with the earlier set inclusions this shows that  $A \subset F_{n,k,r}$  and hence  $R_{n,k} \leq r$ . Thus  $R_{n,k} \leq \min(\tilde{R}_{n,k}, R_{n,k,1})$ , and hence (6.12) as claimed.

Recall that we are assuming that  $k(n)/\log n \rightarrow \beta \in [0, \infty]$  and  $k(n)/n \rightarrow 0$ , as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ , and  $f_1 := \inf_{\partial A} f$ . We shall derive Theorem 4.1 using the next two lemmas.

**Lemma 6.10** *Suppose the assumptions of Theorem 4.1 apply. Then*

$$\mathbb{P}[\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} (n\theta_d R_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n)) \geq 2/f_1] = 1, \quad \text{if } \beta = \infty; \tag{6.13}$$

$$\mathbb{P}[\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} (n\theta_d R_{n,k(n)}^d / \log n) \geq 2\hat{H}_\beta(1 - 1/d)/f_1] = 1, \quad \text{if } \beta < \infty. \tag{6.14}$$

**Proof** Let  $\varepsilon > 0$ . By [21, Lemma 5.8], for each  $r > 0$  we can and do take  $\ell_r \in \mathbb{N} \cup \{0\}$  and points  $y_{r,1}, \dots, y_{r,\ell_r} \in \partial A$  such that the balls  $B(y_{r,i}, r)$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq \ell_r$ , are disjoint and each satisfy  $\mu(B(y_{r,i}, r)) \leq (f_1 + \varepsilon)\theta_d r^d / 2$ , with  $\liminf_{r \downarrow 0} (r^{d-1} \ell_r) > 0$ . In other words,  $\liminf_{r \downarrow 0} r^{d-1} \nu(B, r, (f_1 + \varepsilon)\theta_d r^d / 2) > 0$ .

Hence, if  $\beta = \infty$  then by Lemma 6.2 we have that  $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} (nR_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n)) \geq 2/(\theta_d(f_1 + \varepsilon))$ , almost surely, and this yields (6.13).

Now suppose  $\beta < \infty$ ; also we are assuming  $d \geq 2$ . By taking  $a = (f_1 + \varepsilon)\theta_d / 2$  in Lemma 6.2, we obtain that, almost surely,

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( nR_{n,k(n)}^d / \log n \right) \geq (2 / ((f_1 + \varepsilon)\theta_d)) \hat{H}_\beta (1 - 1/d),$$

and hence (6.14). □

**Lemma 6.11** *Under the assumptions of Theorem 4.1,*

$$\mathbb{P}[\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( n\theta_d R_{n,k(n),1}^d / k(n) \right) \leq 2 / f_1] = 1, \quad \text{if } \beta = \infty; \tag{6.15}$$

$$\mathbb{P}[\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( n\theta_d R_{n,k(n),1}^d / \log n \right) \leq 2\hat{H}_\beta(1 - 1/d) / f_1] = 1, \quad \text{if } \beta < \infty. \tag{6.16}$$

**Proof** We shall apply Lemma 6.3, here taking  $A_r = A \setminus A^{(r)}$ . Observe that by (6.11), event  $\{A \setminus A^{(r)} \subset F_{n,k,r}\}$  implies  $R_{n,k,1} \leq r$ , for all  $r > 0, n, k \in \mathbb{N}$ .

We claim that

$$\kappa(A \setminus A^{(r)}, r) = O(r^{1-d}) \quad \text{as } r \downarrow 0. \tag{6.17}$$

To see this, let  $r > 0$ , and let  $x_1, \dots, x_m \in \partial A$  with  $\partial A \subset \cup_{i=1}^m B(x_i, r)$ , and with  $m = \kappa(\partial A, r)$ . Then  $A \setminus A^{(r)} \subset \cup_{i=1}^m B(x_i, 2r)$ . Setting  $c := \kappa(B(o, 4), 1)$ , we can cover each ball  $B(x_i, 2r)$  by  $c$  balls of radius  $r/2$ , and therefore can cover  $A \setminus A^{(r)}$  by  $cm$  balls of radius  $r/2$ , denoted  $B_1, \dots, B_{cm}$  say. Set  $\mathcal{I} := \{i \in \{1, \dots, cm\} : A \setminus A^{(r)} \cap B_i \neq \emptyset\}$ . For each  $i \in \mathcal{I}$ , select a point  $y_i \in A \setminus A^{(r)} \cap B_i$ . Then  $A \setminus A^{(r)} \subset \cup_{i \in \mathcal{I}} B(y_i, r)$ , and hence  $\kappa(A \setminus A^{(r)}) \leq c\kappa(\partial A, r)$ . By [21, Lemma 5.4],  $\kappa(\partial A, r) = O(r^{1-d})$ , and (6.17) follows.

Let  $\varepsilon_1 \in (0, 1)$ . Since we assume  $f|_A$  is continuous at  $x$  for all  $x \in \partial A$ , there exists  $\delta > 0$  such that  $f(x) > (1 - \varepsilon_1)f_1$  for all  $x \in A$  distant less than  $\delta$  from  $\partial A$ . Then, under the hypotheses of Theorem 4.1, by Lemma 6.9, there is a further constant  $\delta' \in (0, \delta/2)$  such that for all  $r \in (0, \delta')$  and all  $x \in A \setminus A^{(r)}, s \in (0, r]$  we have  $\mu(B(x, s)) \geq (1 - \varepsilon_1)^2 f_1 (\theta_d/2) s^d$ .

Therefore taking  $A_r = A \setminus A^{(r)}$ , the hypotheses of Lemma 6.3 hold with  $a = (1 - \varepsilon_1)^2 f_1 \theta_d/2$  and  $b = d - 1$ .

Thus if  $\beta = \infty$ , then taking  $r_n = (uk(n)/n)^{1/d}$  with  $u > 2(1 - \varepsilon_1)^{-2} / (f_1 \theta_d)$ , by Lemma 6.3 we have almost surely that for all  $n$  large enough,  $A \setminus A^{(r_n)} \subset F_{n,k(n),r_n}$  and hence  $R_{n,k(n),1} \leq r_n$ . That is,  $nR_{n,k(n),1}^d / k(n) \leq u$ , and (6.15) follows.

If  $\beta < \infty$ , take  $u > (2(1 - \varepsilon_1)^{-2} / (f_1 \theta_d)) \hat{H}_\beta(1 - 1/d)$ . By Lemma 6.3, if we set  $r_n = (u(\log n)/n)^{1/d}$ , then there exist  $\varepsilon > 0$  such that if we take  $k'(n) = \lfloor (\beta + \varepsilon) \log n \rfloor$ , then

$$\mathbb{P}[nR_{n,k'(n),1}^d > u \log n] = \mathbb{P}[R_{n,k'(n),1} > r_n] \leq \mathbb{P}[\{(A \setminus A^{(r_n)}) \subset F_{n,k'(n),r_n}\}^c] = O(n^{-\varepsilon}).$$

Also  $R_{n,k,1}$  is nonincreasing in  $n$  and nondecreasing in  $k$ , so by Lemma 6.1, we have almost surely that  $\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} nR_{n,k(n),1}^d / \log n \leq u$ , and hence (6.16). □

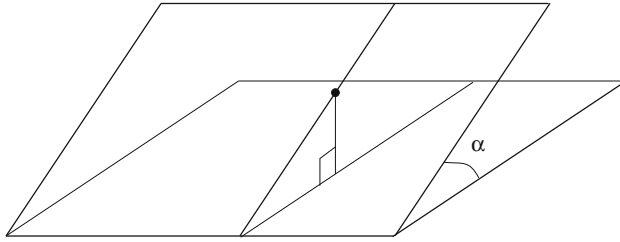


Fig. 1 Illustration of Lemma 6.12 in  $d = 3$  with  $D(\varphi) = D(\varphi') = 2$ . The dot represents a point in  $\varphi^o$

**Proof of Theorem 4.1** By (6.12), Proposition 4.9 and Lemma 6.11,

$$\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( n\theta_d R_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n) \right) \leq \begin{cases} \max(1/f_0, 2/f_1) & \text{if } \beta = \infty \\ \max(\hat{H}_\beta(1)/f_0, 2\hat{H}_\beta(1 - 1/d)/f_1) & \text{if } \beta < \infty, \end{cases}$$

almost surely. Moreover by (6.12), Proposition 4.9 and Lemma 6.10,

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( n\theta_d R_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n) \right) \geq \begin{cases} \max(1/f_0, 2/f_1) & \text{if } \beta = \infty \\ \max(\hat{H}_\beta(1)/f_0, 2\hat{H}_\beta(1 - 1/d)/f_1) & \text{if } \beta < \infty, \end{cases}$$

almost surely, and the result follows. □

### 6.4 Polytopes: Proof of Theorem 4.2

Throughout this subsection we assume, as in Theorem 4.2, that  $A$  is a compact convex finite polytope in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ . We also assume that  $B = A$ , and  $f|_A$  is continuous at  $x$  for all  $x \in \partial A$ , and (4.1) holds for some  $\beta \in [0, \infty]$ .

Given any  $x \in \mathbb{R}^d$  and nonempty  $S \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  we set  $\text{dist}(x, S) := \inf_{y \in S} \|x - y\|$ .

**Lemma 6.12** *Suppose  $\varphi, \varphi'$  are faces of  $A$  with  $D(\varphi) > 0$  and  $D(\varphi') = d - 1$ , and with  $\varphi \cap \varphi' \neq \emptyset$ . Then  $\varphi^o \cap \varphi' = \emptyset$ , and  $K(\varphi, \varphi') < \infty$ , where we set*

$$K(\varphi, \varphi') := \sup_{x \in \varphi^o} \left( \frac{\text{dist}(x, \partial\varphi)}{\text{dist}(x, \varphi')} \right). \tag{6.18}$$

**Proof** If  $\varphi \cap \varphi' = \emptyset$  then  $K(\varphi, \varphi') < \infty$  by an easy compactness argument, so assume  $\varphi \cap \varphi' \neq \emptyset$ . Without loss of generality we may then assume  $o \in \varphi \cap \varphi'$ .

If  $d = 3$ ,  $A$  is convex and  $D(\varphi) = D(\varphi') = 2$ ,  $D(\varphi \cap \varphi') = 1$  and moreover  $\varphi, \varphi'$  are rectangular with angle  $\alpha$  between them and  $0 < \alpha < \pi$ , then  $K(\varphi, \varphi') = \sec \alpha$ , as illustrated in Fig. 1. However to generalize to all  $d$  takes some care.

Let  $\langle \varphi \rangle$ , respectively  $\langle \varphi' \rangle$ , be the linear subspace of  $\mathbb{R}^d$  generated by  $\varphi$ , respectively by  $\varphi'$ . Set  $\psi := \langle \varphi \rangle \cap \langle \varphi' \rangle$ .

Since we assume  $A$  is convex,  $A \cap \langle \varphi' \rangle = \varphi'$ , and  $\langle \varphi' \rangle$  is a supporting hyperplane of  $A$ .



We claim that  $\varphi \cap \langle \varphi' \rangle \subset \partial\varphi$ . Indeed, let  $z \in \varphi \cap \langle \varphi' \rangle$  and  $y \in \varphi \setminus \varphi'$ . Then  $y \in \varphi \setminus \langle \varphi' \rangle$ , and for all  $\varepsilon > 0$  the vector  $y + (1 + \varepsilon)(z - y)$  lies in the affine hull of  $\varphi$  but not in  $A$ , since it is on the wrong side of the supporting hyperplane  $\langle \varphi' \rangle$ , and therefore not in  $\varphi$ . This shows that  $z \in \partial\varphi$ , and hence the claim.

Since  $\varphi \cap \psi \subset \varphi \cap \langle \varphi' \rangle$ , it follows from the preceding claim that  $\varphi \cap \psi \subset \partial\varphi$ .

Now let  $x \in \varphi^o$ . Then  $x \in \langle \varphi \rangle \setminus \psi$ . Let  $\pi_\psi(x)$  denote the point in  $\psi$  closest to  $x$ , and set  $a := \|x - \pi_\psi(x)\| = \text{dist}(x, \psi)$ . Then  $a > 0$ .

Set  $w := a^{-1}(x - \pi_\psi(x))$ . Then  $\|w\| = 1$ ,  $w \in \langle \varphi \rangle$  and  $w \perp \psi$  (i.e., the Euclidean inner product of  $w$  and  $z$  is zero for all  $z \in \psi$ ), so  $\text{dist}(w, \langle \varphi' \rangle) \geq \delta$ , where we set

$$\delta := \inf\{\text{dist}(y, \langle \varphi' \rangle) : y \in \langle \varphi \rangle, \|y\| = 1, y \perp \psi\}.$$

If  $y \in \langle \varphi \rangle \setminus \psi$  then  $y \notin \langle \varphi' \rangle$  so  $\text{dist}(y, \langle \varphi' \rangle) > 0$ . Therefore  $\delta$  is the infimum of a continuous, strictly positive function defined on a non-empty compact set of vectors  $y$ , and hence  $0 < \delta < \infty$ . Thus for  $x \in \varphi^o$ , with  $w, a$  as given above, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \text{dist}(x, \varphi') &\geq \text{dist}(x, \langle \varphi' \rangle) = \text{dist}(\pi_\psi(x) + aw, \langle \varphi' \rangle) \\ &= \text{dist}(aw, \langle \varphi' \rangle) \\ &\geq \delta a = \delta \text{dist}(x, \psi). \end{aligned} \tag{6.19}$$

If  $\pi_\psi(x) \notin \varphi$ , then there is a point in  $[x, \pi_\psi(x)] \cap \partial\varphi$ , while if  $\pi_\psi(x) \in \varphi$ , then  $\pi_\psi(x) \in \partial\varphi$ . Either way  $\text{dist}(x, \psi) \geq \text{dist}(x, \partial\varphi)$ , and hence by (6.19),  $\text{dist}(x, \varphi') \geq \delta \text{dist}(x, \partial\varphi)$ . Therefore  $K(\varphi, \varphi') \leq \delta^{-1} < \infty$  as required.  $\square$

Recall that we are assuming (4.1). Also, recall that for each face  $\varphi$  of  $A$  we denote the angular volume of  $A$  at  $\varphi$  by  $\rho_\varphi$ , and set  $f_\varphi := \inf_\varphi f(\cdot)$ .

**Lemma 6.13** *Let  $\varphi$  be a face of  $A$ . Then, almost surely:*

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( nR_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n) \right) \geq (\rho_\varphi f_\varphi)^{-1} \quad \text{if } \beta = \infty; \tag{6.20}$$

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( nR_{n,k(n)}^d / \log n \right) \geq (\rho_\varphi f_\varphi)^{-1} \hat{H}_\beta(D(\varphi)/d) \quad \text{if } \beta < \infty. \tag{6.21}$$

**Proof** Let  $a > f_\varphi$ . Take  $x_0 \in \varphi$  such that  $f(x_0) < a$ . If  $D(\varphi) > 0$ , assume also that  $x_0 \in \varphi^o$ . By the assumed continuity of  $f$  at  $x_0$ , for all small enough  $r > 0$  we have  $\mu(B(x_0, r)) \leq a\rho_\varphi r^d$ , so that  $v(B, r, a\rho_\varphi r^d) = \Omega(1)$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ . Hence by Lemma 6.2 (taking  $b = 0$ ), if  $\beta = \infty$  then almost surely  $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} nR_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n) \geq 1/(a\rho_\varphi)$ , and (6.20) follows. Also, if  $\beta < \infty$  and  $D(\varphi) = 0$ , then by Lemma 6.2 (again with  $b = 0$ ), almost surely  $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} (nR_{n,k(n)}^d / \log n) \geq \hat{H}_\beta(0)/(a\rho_\varphi)$ , and hence (6.21) in this case.

Now suppose  $\beta < \infty$  and  $D(\varphi) > 0$ . Take  $\delta > 0$  such that  $f(x) < a$  for all  $x \in B(x_0, 2\delta) \cap A$ , and such that moreover  $B(x_0, 2\delta) \cap A = B(x_0, 2\delta) \cap (x_0 + \mathcal{K}_\varphi)$  (the cone  $\mathcal{K}_\varphi$  was defined in Sect. 4). Then for all  $x \in B(x_0, \delta) \cap \varphi$  and all  $r \in (0, \delta)$ , we have  $\mu(B(x, r)) \leq a\rho_\varphi r^d$ .

There is a constant  $c > 0$  such that for small enough  $r > 0$  we can find at least  $cr^{-D(\varphi)}$  points  $x_i \in B(x_0, \delta) \cap \varphi$  that are all at a distance more than  $2r$  from each

other, and therefore  $\nu(B, r, a\rho_\varphi r^d) = \Omega(r^{-D(\varphi)})$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ . Thus by Lemma 6.2 we have

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( nR_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n) \right) \geq (a\rho_\varphi)^{-1} \hat{H}_\beta(D(\varphi)/d),$$

almost surely, and (6.21) follows. □

We now define a sequence of positive constants  $K_1, K_2, \dots$  depending on  $A$  as follows. With  $K(\varphi, \varphi')$  defined at (6.18), set

$$K_A := \max\{K(\varphi, \varphi') : \varphi, \varphi' \in \Phi(A), D(\varphi') = d - 1, \varphi \setminus \varphi' \neq \emptyset\}, \tag{6.22}$$

which is finite by Lemma 6.12. Then for  $j = 1, 2, \dots$  set  $K_j := j(K_A + 1)^{j-1}$ . Then  $K_1 = 1$  and for each  $j \geq 1$  we have  $K_{j+1} \geq (K_A + 1)(K_j + 1)$ .

For each face  $\varphi$  of  $A$  and each  $r > 0$ , define the sets  $\varphi_r := \cup_{x \in \varphi} B(x, r) \cap A$ , and also  $(\partial\varphi)_r := \cup_{x \in \partial\varphi} B(x, r) \cap A$  (so if  $D(\varphi) = 0$  then  $(\partial\varphi)_r = \partial\varphi = \emptyset$ ). Given also  $r > 0$ , define for each  $n, k \in \mathbb{N}$  the event  $G_{n,k,r,\varphi}$  as follows:

If  $D(\varphi) = d - j$  with  $1 \leq j \leq d$ , let  $G_{n,k,r,\varphi} := \{(\varphi_{K_j r} \setminus (\partial\varphi)_{K_{j+1} r}) \setminus F_{n,k,r} \neq \emptyset\}$ , the event that there exists  $x \in \varphi_{K_j r} \setminus (\partial\varphi)_{K_{j+1} r}$  such that  $\mathcal{X}_n(B(x, r)) < k$ .

Let  $R_{n,k,1}$  be the smallest radius  $r$  of balls required to cover  $k$  times the boundary region  $A \setminus A^{(r)}$ , as defined at (6.11).

**Lemma 6.14** *Given  $r > 0$  and  $n, k \in \mathbb{N}$ ,  $\{R_{n,k,1} > r\} \subset \cup_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} G_{n,k,r,\varphi}$ .*

**Proof** Suppose  $R_{n,k,1} > r$ . Then we can and do choose a point  $x \in (A \setminus A^{(r)}) \setminus F_{n,k,r}$ , and a face  $\varphi_1 \in \Phi(A)$  with  $D(\varphi_1) = d - 1$ , and with  $x \in (\varphi_1)_r = (\varphi_1)_{K_1 r}$ .

If  $x \notin (\partial\varphi_1)_{K_2 r}$  then  $G_{n,k,r,\varphi_1}$  occurs. Otherwise, we can and do choose  $\varphi_2 \in \Phi(A)$  with  $D(\varphi_2) = d - 2$  and  $x \in (\varphi_2)_{K_2 r}$ .

If  $x \notin (\partial\varphi_2)_{K_3 r}$  then  $G_{n,k,r,\varphi_2}$  occurs. Otherwise, we can choose  $\varphi_3 \in \Phi(A)$  with  $D(\varphi_3) = d - 3$  and  $x \in (\varphi_3)_{K_3 r}$ .

Continuing in this way, we obtain a terminating sequence of faces  $\varphi_1 \supset \varphi_2 \supset \dots \varphi_m$ , with  $m \leq d$ , such that for  $j = 1, 2, \dots, m$  we have  $D(\varphi_j) = d - j$  and  $x \in (\varphi_j)_{K_j r}$ , and  $x \notin (\partial\varphi_m)_{K_{m+1} r}$  (the sequence must terminate because if  $D(\varphi) = 0$  then  $(\partial\varphi)_s = \emptyset$  for all  $s > 0$  by definition). But then  $G_{n,k,r,\varphi_m}$  occurs, completing the proof. □

**Lemma 6.15** *Let  $r > 0$  and  $j \in \mathbb{N}$ . Suppose  $\varphi \in \Phi(A)$  and  $x \in \varphi_{K_j r} \setminus (\partial\varphi)_{K_{j+1} r}$ . Then for all  $\varphi' \in \Phi(A)$  with  $D(\varphi') = d - 1$  and  $\varphi \setminus \varphi' \neq \emptyset$ , we have  $\text{dist}(x, \varphi') \geq r$ .*

**Proof** Suppose some such  $\varphi'$  exists with  $\text{dist}(x, \varphi') < r$ . Then there exist points  $z \in \varphi$  and  $z' \in \varphi'$  with  $\|z - x\| \leq K_j r$ , and  $\|z' - x\| < r$ , so that by the triangle inequality  $\|z' - z\| < (K_j + 1)r$ .

By (6.18) and (6.22), this implies that  $\text{dist}(z, \partial\varphi) < K_A(K_j + 1)r$ . On the other hand, we also have that

$$\text{dist}(z, \partial\varphi) \geq \text{dist}(x, \partial\varphi) - \|z - x\| \geq (K_{j+1} - K_j)r,$$

and combining these inequalities shows that  $K_{j+1} - K_j < K_A(K_j + 1)$ , that is,  $K_{j+1} < K_j(K_A + 1) + K_A < (K_j + 1)(K_A + 1)$ . However, we earlier defined the sequence  $(K_j)$  in such a way that  $K_{j+1} \geq (K_j + 1)(K_A + 1)$ , so we have a contradiction.  $\square$

**Lemma 6.16** *Let  $\varphi$  be a face of  $A$ . If  $\beta = \infty$  then let  $u > 1/(f_\varphi \rho_\varphi)$ . If  $\beta < \infty$ , let  $u > \hat{H}_\beta(D(\varphi)/d)/(f_\varphi \rho_\varphi)$ . For each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ , set  $r_n = (uk(n)/n)^{1/d}$  if  $\beta = \infty$ , and set  $r_n = (u(\log n)/n)^{1/d}$  if  $\beta < \infty$ . Then:*

- (i) *if  $\beta = \infty$  then a.s. the events  $G_{n,k(n),r_n,\varphi}$  occur for only finitely many  $n$ ;*
- (ii) *if  $\beta < \infty$  then there exists  $\varepsilon > 0$  such that, setting  $k'(n) := \lfloor (\beta + \varepsilon) \log n \rfloor$ , we have that  $\mathbb{P}[G_{n,k'(n),r_n,\varphi}] = O(n^{-\varepsilon})$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** Set  $j = d - D(\varphi)$ . We shall apply Lemma 6.3, now taking  $A_r = \varphi_{K_j r} \setminus (\partial\varphi)_{K_{j+1}r}$ . With this choice of  $A_r$ , observe first that  $\kappa(A_r, r) = O(r^{-D(\varphi)})$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ .

Let  $\delta \in (0, 1)$ . Assume  $u > 1/(f_\varphi \rho_\varphi(1 - \delta))$  if  $\beta = \infty$  and assume that  $u > \hat{H}_\beta(D(\varphi)/d)/(f_\varphi \rho_\varphi(1 - \delta))$  if  $\beta < \infty$ .

By Lemma 6.15, for all small enough  $r$ , and for all  $x \in \varphi_{K_j r} \setminus (\partial\varphi)_{K_{j+1}r}$ , and all  $s \in (0, r]$ , the ball  $B(x, s)$  does not intersect any of the faces of dimension  $d - 1$ , other than those which meet at  $\varphi$  (i.e., which contain  $\varphi$ ). Also  $f(y) \geq (1 - \delta)f_\varphi$  for all  $y \in A$  sufficiently close to  $\varphi$ . Also we are assuming  $A$  is convex, so  $\mathcal{X}_\varphi$  is a convex cone. Hence

$$\mu(B(x, s)) \geq (1 - \delta)f_\varphi \rho_\varphi s^d.$$

Therefore we can apply Lemma 6.3, now with  $A_r = \varphi_{K_j r} \setminus (\partial\varphi)_{K_{j+1}r}$ , taking  $a = (1 - \delta)f_\varphi \rho_\varphi$  and  $b = D(\varphi)$ .

If  $\beta = \infty$ , taking  $u > 1/(f_\varphi \rho_\varphi(1 - \delta))$  and  $r_n = (uk(n)/n)^{1/d}$ , by Lemma 6.3 we have with probability 1 that  $\varphi_{K_j r_n} \setminus (\partial\varphi)_{K_{j+1}r_n} \subset F_{n,k(n),r_n}$  for all large enough  $n$ , which gives part (i).

If  $\beta < \infty$ , taking  $u > \hat{H}_\beta(D(\varphi)/d)/(f_\varphi \rho_\varphi(1 - \delta))$ , and setting  $r_n = (u(\log n)/n)^{1/d}$ , we have from Lemma 6.3 that there exists  $\varepsilon > 0$  such that setting  $k'(n) := \lfloor (\beta + \varepsilon) \log n \rfloor$ , we have  $\mathbb{P}[\{\varphi_{K_j r_n} \setminus (\partial\varphi)_{K_{j+1}r_n} \subset F_{n,k'(n),r_n}\}^c] = O(n^{-\varepsilon})$ , which gives part (ii).  $\square$

**Proof of Theorem 4.2** Suppose  $\beta = \infty$ . Let  $u > \max\left(\frac{1}{\theta_d f_0}, \max_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} \frac{1}{f_\varphi \rho_\varphi}\right)$ . Setting  $r_n = (uk(n)/n)^{1/d}$ , we have from Lemma 6.16 that  $G_{n,k(n),r_n,\varphi}$  occurs only finitely often, a.s., for each  $\varphi \in \Phi(A)$ . Hence by Lemma 6.14,  $R_{n,k(n),1} \leq r_n$  for all large enough  $n$ , a.s. Hence, almost surely  $\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(nR_{n,k(n),1}^d/k(n)\right) \leq u$ .

Since  $u > 1/(\theta_d f_0)$ , by Proposition 4.9 we also have  $\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(n\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}^d/k(n)\right) \leq u$ , almost surely, and hence by (6.12), almost surely

$$\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(nR_{n,k(n)}^d/k(n)\right) \leq \max\left((\theta_d f_0)^{-1}, \max_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} 1/(f_\varphi \rho_\varphi)\right).$$

Moreover, by Lemma 6.13, Proposition 4.9 and (6.12) we also have that

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( nR_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n) \right) \geq \max \left( (\theta_d f_0)^{-1}, \max_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} 1 / (f_\varphi \rho_\varphi) \right),$$

and thus (4.7).

Now suppose  $\beta < \infty$ . Let  $u > \max \left( \hat{H}_\beta(1) / (f_0 \theta_d), \max_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} \hat{H}_\beta(D(\varphi) / d) / (f_\varphi \rho_\varphi) \right)$ . Set  $r_n := (u(\log n) / n)^{1/d}$ . Given  $\varphi \in \Phi(A)$ , by Lemma 6.16 there exists  $\varepsilon > 0$  such that, setting  $k'(n) := \lfloor (\beta + \varepsilon) \log n \rfloor$ , we have  $\mathbb{P}[G_{n,k'(n),r_n,\varphi}] = O(n^{-\varepsilon})$ . Hence by Lemma 6.14 and the union bound,

$$\mathbb{P}[nR_{n,k'(n),1}^d / \log n > u] = \mathbb{P}[R_{n,k'(n),1} > r_n] = O(n^{-\varepsilon}).$$

Thus by the subsequence trick (Lemma 6.1 (a)),  $\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( nR_{n,k(n),1}^d / \log n \right) \leq u$ , almost surely. Since  $u > \hat{H}_\beta(1) / (f_0 \theta_d)$ , and we take  $B = A$  here, by Proposition 4.9 we also have a.s. that  $\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( n\tilde{R}_{n,k(n)}^d / \log n \right) \leq u$ , and hence by (6.12), almost surely

$$\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( nR_{n,k(n)}^d / \log n \right) \leq \max \left( \frac{\hat{H}_\beta(1)}{f_0 \theta_d}, \max_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} \left( \frac{\hat{H}_\beta(D(\varphi) / d)}{f_\varphi \rho_\varphi} \right) \right).$$

Moreover, by Lemma 6.13, Proposition 4.9 and (6.12), we also have a.s. that

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left( nR_{n,k(n)}^d / k(n) \right) \geq \max \left( \frac{\hat{H}_\beta(1)}{\theta_d f_0}, \max_{\varphi \in \Phi(A)} \left( \frac{\hat{H}_\beta(D(\varphi) / d)}{f_\varphi \rho_\varphi} \right) \right),$$

and thus (4.8). □

### 7 Proof of results from Sect. 3

Throughout this section, we assume  $f = f_0 \mathbf{1}_A$ , where  $A \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  is compact and Riemann measurable with  $|A| > 0$ , and  $f_0 := |A|^{-1}$ .

#### 7.1 Preliminaries, and proof of Propositions 3.4 and 3.6

We start by showing that any weak convergence result for  $R'_{t,k}$  (in the large- $t$  limit) of the type we seek to prove, implies the corresponding weak convergence result for  $R_{n,k}$  in the large- $n$  limit. This is needed because all of the results in Sect. 3 are stated both for  $R_{n,k}$  and for  $R'_{t,k}$  (these quantities were defined at (2.1) and (2.2)).

**Lemma 7.1** (de-Poissonization) *Suppose  $\mu$  is uniform over  $A$ . Let  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ , and  $a, b, c \in \mathbb{R}$  with  $a > 0$  and  $b > 0$ . Let  $F$  be a continuous cumulative distribution function.*

Suppose that

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[at(R'_{t,k})^d - b \log t - c \log \log t \leq \gamma] = F(\gamma), \quad \forall \gamma \in \mathbb{R}. \tag{7.1}$$

Then

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[anR_{n,k}^d - b \log n - c \log \log n \leq \gamma] = F(\gamma), \quad \forall \gamma \in \mathbb{R}. \tag{7.2}$$

**Proof** For each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ , set  $t(n) := n - n^{3/4}$ . Let  $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}$ . Given  $n \in \mathbb{N} \cap (1, \infty)$ , set

$$r_n := \left( \frac{b \log n + c \log \log n + \gamma}{an} \right)^{1/d}.$$

Then

$$\begin{aligned} & t(n)ar_n^d - b \log(t(n)) - c \log \log(t(n)) \\ &= (b \log n + c \log \log n + \gamma) \frac{t(n)}{n} - b \log(n - n^{3/4}) - c \log \log(n - n^{3/4}) \\ &\rightarrow \gamma. \end{aligned} \tag{7.3}$$

Then by (7.1), and the continuity of  $F$ , we obtain that

$$\mathbb{P}[R'_{t(n),k} \leq r_n] \rightarrow F(\gamma). \tag{7.4}$$

Moreover, since adding further points reduces the  $k$ -coverage threshold,

$$\mathbb{P}[R'_{t(n),k} \leq r_n < R_{n,k}] \leq \mathbb{P}[R'_{t(n),k} < R_{n,k}] \leq \mathbb{P}[Z_{t(n)} > n], \tag{7.5}$$

which tends to zero by Chebyshev’s inequality.

Now suppose  $R'_{t(n),k} > r_n$ . Pick a point  $X$  of  $B$  that is covered by fewer than  $k$  of the closed balls of radius  $r_n$  centred on points in  $\mathcal{P}_{t(n)}$  (this can be done in a measurable way). If, additionally,  $R_{n,k} \leq r_n$ , then we must have  $Z_{t(n)} < n$ , and at least one of the points  $X_{Z_{t(n)}+1}, X_{Z_{t(n)}+2}, \dots, X_n$  must lie in  $B(X, r_n)$ . Therefore

$$\mathbb{P}[R'_{t(n),k} > r_n \geq R_{n,k}] \leq \mathbb{P}[\{n - 2n^{3/4} \leq Z_{t(n)} \leq n\}^c] + 2n^{3/4}\theta_d f_0 r_n^d,$$

which tends to zero by Chebyshev’s inequality. Combined with (7.5) and (7.4) this shows that  $\mathbb{P}[R_{n,k} \leq r_n] \rightarrow F(\gamma)$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ , which gives us (7.2) as required.  $\square$

The *spherical Poisson Boolean model (SPBM)* is defined to be a collection of Euclidean balls (referred to as *grains*) of i.i.d. random radii, centred on the points of a homogeneous Poisson process in the whole of  $\mathbb{R}^d$ . Often in the literature the SPBM is taken to be the *union* of these balls (see e.g. [19]) but here, following [13], we take the SPBM to be the *collection* of these balls, rather than their union. This enables us to consider multiple coverage: given  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  we say a point  $x \in \mathbb{R}^d$  is *covered  $k$  times*

by the SPBM if it lies in  $k$  of the balls in this collection. The SPBM is parametrised by the intensity of the Poisson process and the distribution of the radii.

We shall repeatedly use the following result, which comes from results in Janson [16] or (when  $k = 1$ ) Hall [12]. Recall that  $c_d$  was defined at (3.1).

**Lemma 7.2** *Let  $d, k \in \mathbb{N}$ . Suppose  $Y$  is a bounded nonnegative random variable, and  $\alpha = \theta_d \mathbb{E}[Y^d]$  is the expected volume of a ball of radius  $Y$ . Let  $\beta \in \mathbb{R}$ . Suppose  $\delta(\lambda) \in (0, \infty)$  is defined for all  $\lambda > 0$ , and satisfies*

$$\lim_{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} \left( \alpha \delta(\lambda)^d \lambda - \log \lambda - (d + k - 2) \log \log \lambda \right) = \beta. \tag{7.6}$$

*Let  $B \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  be compact and Riemann measurable, and for each  $\lambda > 0$  let  $B_\lambda \subset B$  be Riemann measurable with the properties that  $B_\lambda \subset B_{\lambda'}$  whenever  $\lambda \leq \lambda'$ , and that  $\cup_{\lambda > 0} B_\lambda \supset B^o$ .*

*Let  $E_\lambda$  be the event that every point in  $B_\lambda$  is covered at least  $k$  times by a spherical Poisson Boolean model with intensity  $\lambda$  and radii having the distribution of  $\delta(\lambda)Y$ . Then*

$$\lim_{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[E_\lambda] = \exp \left( - \left( \frac{c_d (\mathbb{E}[Y^{d-1}])^d}{(k-1)! (\mathbb{E}[Y^d])^{d-1}} \right) |B| e^{-\beta} \right). \tag{7.7}$$

In the proof, and elsewhere, we use the fact that asymptotics of iterated logarithms are unaffected by multiplicative constants: if  $a > 0$  then as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  we have

$$\log \log (ta) = \log (\log t (1 + (\log a) / \log t)) = \log \log t + o(1). \tag{7.8}$$

**Proof of Lemma 7.2** For  $k = 1$ , when  $B_\lambda = B$  for all  $\lambda > 0$  the result can be obtained from [12, Theorem 2]. Since [12] does not address multiple coverage, we use [16] instead to prove the result for general  $k$ . Because of the way the result is stated in [16], we need to express  $\log(1/(\alpha\delta^d))$  and  $\log \log(1/(\alpha\delta^d))$  asymptotically in terms of  $\lambda$  (we are now writing just  $\delta$  for  $\delta(\lambda)$ ). By (7.6),

$$\alpha \delta^d = \lambda^{-1} (\log \lambda) (1 + o(1)) \tag{7.9}$$

so that  $\log(1/(\alpha\delta^d)) = \log \lambda - \log \log \lambda + o(1)$  and  $\log \log(1/(\alpha\delta^d)) = \log \log \lambda + o(1)$ . Therefore we have as  $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$  that

$$\begin{aligned} \lambda \delta^d \alpha - \log(1/(\alpha\delta^d)) - (d + k - 1) \log \log(1/(\alpha\delta^d)) \\ = \lambda \delta^d \alpha - \log \lambda - (d + k - 2) \log \log \lambda + o(1), \end{aligned} \tag{7.10}$$

which tends to  $\beta$  by (7.6).

Let  $\alpha_J$  be the quantity denoted  $\alpha$  by Janson [16] (our  $\alpha$  is the quantity so denoted by Hall [12]). In the present setting, as described in [16, Example 4],

$$\alpha_J = \frac{1}{d!} \left( \frac{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma(1 + d/2)}{\Gamma((1 + d)/2)} \right)^{d-1} \frac{(\mathbb{E}[Y^{d-1}])^d}{(\mathbb{E}[Y^d])^{d-1}} = \frac{c_d (\mathbb{E}[Y^{d-1}])^d}{(\mathbb{E}[Y^d])^{d-1}}.$$

Let  $\tilde{A} = B(o, r_0)$  with  $r_0$  chosen large enough so that  $B$  is contained in the interior of  $\tilde{A}$ . Let  $(X_1, Y_1), (X_2, Y_2), \dots$  be independent identically distributed random  $(d + 1)$ -vectors with  $X_1$  uniformly distributed over  $\tilde{A}$  and  $Y_1$  having the distribution of  $Y$ , independent of  $X_1$ .

Set  $n(\lambda) := \lceil \lambda |\tilde{A}| - \lambda^{3/4} \rceil$ . Let  $\tilde{E}_\lambda$  be the event that every point of  $B$  is covered at least  $k$  times by the balls  $B(X_1, \delta Y_1), \dots, B(X_{n(\lambda)}, \delta Y_{n(\lambda)})$ . By (7.9) we have  $\lambda^{3/4} \delta^d \rightarrow 0$ , so that  $n(\lambda) \delta^d \alpha / |\tilde{A}| = \lambda \delta^d \alpha + o(1)$ , and hence by (7.10), and (7.8), we have as  $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$  that

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{n(\lambda) \delta^d \alpha}{|\tilde{A}|} - \log \left( \frac{|B|}{\alpha \delta^d} \right) - (d + k - 1) \log \log \left( \frac{|B|}{\alpha \delta^d} \right) + \log \left( \frac{(k - 1)!}{\alpha_J} \right) \\ \rightarrow \beta + \log \left( \frac{(k - 1)!}{\alpha_J |B|} \right). \end{aligned}$$

Then by [16, Theorem 1.1]

$$\mathbb{P}[\tilde{E}_\lambda] \rightarrow \exp \left( - \left( \frac{\alpha_J |B|}{(k - 1)!} \right) e^{-\beta} \right). \tag{7.11}$$

We can and do assume that our Poisson Boolean model, restricted to grains centred in  $\tilde{A}$ , is coupled to the sequence  $(X_n, Y_n)_{n \geq 1}$  as follows. Taking  $Z_{\lambda|\tilde{A}|}$  to be Poisson distributed with mean  $\lambda|\tilde{A}|$ , independent of  $(X_1, Y_1), (X_2, Y_2), \dots$ , assume the restricted Boolean model consists of the balls  $B(X_i, \delta Y_i), 1 \leq i \leq Z_{\lambda|\tilde{A}|}$ .

Then  $\mathbb{P}[\tilde{E}_\lambda \setminus E_\lambda] \leq \mathbb{P}[Z_{\lambda|\tilde{A}|} < n(\lambda)]$ , which tends to zero by Chebyshev’s inequality. Also, if  $\tilde{E}_\lambda$  fails to occur, we can and do choose (in a measurable way) a point  $V \in B$  which is covered by fewer than  $k$  of the balls  $B(X_i, \delta Y_i), 1 \leq i \leq n(\lambda)$ . Then for large  $\lambda$ , grains centred outside  $\tilde{A}$  cannot intersect  $B$ , and

$$\mathbb{P}[E_\lambda \setminus \tilde{E}_\lambda] \leq \mathbb{P}[Z_{\lambda|A|} - n(\lambda) > 2\lambda^{3/4}] + 2\lambda^{3/4} \mathbb{P}[X_1 \in B(V, \delta)]$$

which tends to zero by Chebyshev’s inequality and (7.9). These estimates, together with (7.11), give us the asserted result (7.7) for general  $k$  in the case with  $B_\lambda = B$  for all  $\lambda$ . It is then straightforward to obtain (7.7) for general  $(B_\lambda)$  satisfying the stated conditions. □

**Proof of Proposition 3.4** Suppose for some  $\beta \in \mathbb{R}$  that  $(r_t)_{t>0}$  satisfies

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \left( \theta_d t f_0 r_t^d - \log(t f_0) - (d + k - 2) \log \log t \right) = \beta. \tag{7.12}$$

The point process  $\mathcal{P}_t = \{X_1, \dots, X_{Z_t}\}$  is a homogeneous Poisson process of intensity  $tf_0$  in  $A$ . Let  $\mathcal{Q}_t$  be a homogeneous Poisson process of intensity  $tf_0$  in  $\mathbb{R}^d \setminus A$ , independent of  $\mathcal{P}_t$ . Then  $\mathcal{P}_t \cup \mathcal{Q}_t$  is a homogeneous Poisson process of intensity  $tf_0$  in all of  $\mathbb{R}^d$ .

The balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on the points of  $\mathcal{P}_t \cup \mathcal{Q}_t$  form a Boolean model in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ , and in the notation of Lemma 7.2, here we have  $\delta(\lambda) = r_t$ , and  $\mathbb{P}[Y = 1] = 1$ , so that  $\alpha = \theta_d$ , and  $\lambda = tf_0$ , so that  $\log \log \lambda = \log \log t + o(1)$  by (7.8).

Also, by (7.12) we have the condition (7.6) from Lemma 7.2.

First assume  $B$  is compact and Riemann measurable with  $B \subset A^o$ . Then for all large enough  $t$  we have  $B \subset A^{(r_t)}$ , in which case  $R'_{n,k} \leq r_t$  if and only if all locations in  $B$  are covered at least  $k$  times by the balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on points of  $\mathcal{P}_t \cup \mathcal{Q}_t$ , which is precisely the event denoted  $E_\lambda$  in Lemma 7.2. Therefore by that result, we obtain that  $\mathbb{P}[R'_{t,k} \leq r_t] \rightarrow \exp(-(c_d/(k-1)!)|B|e^{-\beta})$ . This yields the second equality of (3.7). We then obtain the first equality of (3.7) using Lemma 7.1.

Now consider general Riemann measurable  $B \subset A$  (dropping the previous stronger assumption on  $B$ ). Given  $\varepsilon > 0$ , by using [21, Lemma 11.12] we can find a Riemann measurable compact set  $B' \subset A^o$  with  $|A \setminus B'| < \varepsilon$ . Then  $B \cap B'$  is also Riemann measurable. Let  $S_{Z_t,k}$  be the smallest radius of balls centred on  $\mathcal{P}_t$  needed to cover  $k$  times the set  $B \cap B'$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[S_{Z_t,k} \leq r_t] \rightarrow \exp(-(c_d/(k-1)!)|B \cap B'|e^{-\beta})$ . For sufficiently large  $t$  we have  $\mathbb{P}[\tilde{R}_{Z_t,k} \leq r_t] \leq \mathbb{P}[S_{Z_t,k} \leq r_t]$ , but also  $\mathbb{P}[\{S_{Z_t,k} \leq r_t\} \setminus \{\tilde{R}_{Z_t,k} \leq r_t\}]$  is bounded by the probability that  $A \setminus B'$  is not covered  $k$  times by a SPBM of intensity  $tf_0$  with radii  $r_t$ , which converges to  $1 - \exp(-(c_d/(k-1)!)|A \setminus B'|e^{-\beta})$ . Using these estimates we may deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} \limsup_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[\tilde{R}_{Z_t,k} \leq r_t] &\leq \exp[-(c_d/(k-1)!) (|B| - \varepsilon)e^{-\beta}]; \\ \liminf_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[\tilde{R}_{Z_t,k} \leq r_t] &\geq \exp\left[-\left(\frac{c_d}{(k-1)!}\right) |B|e^{-\beta}\right] \\ &\quad - \left(1 - \exp\left(-\left(\frac{c_d}{(k-1)!}\right) \varepsilon e^{-\beta}\right)\right), \end{aligned}$$

and since  $\varepsilon$  can be arbitrarily small, that  $\mathbb{P}[\tilde{R}_{Z_t,k} \leq r_t] \rightarrow \exp(-(c_d/(k-1)!)|B|e^{-\beta})$ . This yields the second equality of (3.6), and then we can obtain the first equality of (3.6) by a similar argument to Lemma 7.1. □

**Proof of Proposition 3.6** It suffices to prove this result in the special case with  $c' = 0$  (we leave it to the reader to verify this). Recall that (in this special case) we assume  $anR_{n,k}^d - b \log n - c \log \log n \xrightarrow{\mathcal{D}} Z$ . Let  $(r_m)_{m \geq 1}$  be an arbitrary real-valued sequence satisfying  $r_m \downarrow 0$  as  $m \rightarrow \infty$ . Let  $t \in \mathbb{R}$ . Then for all but finitely many  $m \in \mathbb{N}$  we can and do define  $n_m \in \mathbb{N}$  by

$$n_m := \lfloor a^{-1}r_m^{-d} \left( b \log((b/a)r_m^{-d}) + (c + b) \log \log(r_m^{-d}) + t \right) \rfloor,$$



and set  $t_m := ar_m^d n_m - b \log((b/a)r_m^{-d}) - (c + b) \log \log(r_m^{-d})$ . As  $m \rightarrow \infty$ , we have  $t_m \rightarrow t$  and also  $\log n_m = \log[(b/a)r_m^{-d} \log((b/a)r_m^{-d})] + o(1)$ , and hence  $\log \log n_m = \log \log(r_m^{-d}) + o(1)$ . Therefore

$$an_m r_m^d - b \log n_m - c \log \log n_m = an_m r_m^d - b \log((b/a)r_m^{-d}) - b \log \log((b/a)r_m^{-d}) - c \log \log(r_m^{-d}) + o(1),$$

which converges to  $t$  (using (7.8)).

Also as  $m \rightarrow \infty$  we have  $n_m \rightarrow \infty$  and

$$\begin{aligned} &\mathbb{P}[ar_m^d N(r_m, k) - b \log((b/a)r_m^{-d}) - (c + b) \log \log(r_m^{-d}) \leq t_m] \\ &= \mathbb{P}[N(r_m, k) \leq n_m] = \mathbb{P}[R_{n_m, k} \leq r_m], \end{aligned}$$

and by the convergence in distribution assumption, this converges to  $\mathbb{P}[Z \leq t]$ .  $\square$

We shall use the following notation throughout the sequel. Fix  $d, k \in \mathbb{N}$ . Suppose that  $r_t > 0$  is defined for each  $t > 0$ .

Given any point process  $\mathcal{X}$  in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ , and any  $t > 0$ , define the ‘vacant’ region

$$V_t(\mathcal{X}) := \{x \in \mathbb{R}^d : \mathcal{X}(B(x, r_t)) < k\}, \tag{7.13}$$

which is the set of locations in  $\mathbb{R}^d$  covered fewer than  $k$  times by the balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on the points of  $\mathcal{X}$ . Given also  $D \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ , define the event

$$F_t(D, \mathcal{X}) := \{V_t(\mathcal{X}) \cap D = \emptyset\}, \tag{7.14}$$

which is the event that every location in  $D$  is covered at least  $k$  times by the collection of balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on the points of  $\mathcal{X}$ . Again the  $F$  stands for ‘fully covered’, but we no longer need the notation  $F_{n,k,r}$  from (6.3). However, we do use the notation  $\kappa(D, r)$  from (6.2) in the next result, which will be used to show various ‘exceptional’ regions are covered with high probability in the proofs that follow.

**Lemma 7.3** *Let  $t_0 \geq 0$ , and suppose  $(r_t)_{t>t_0}$  satisfies  $tr_t^d \sim c \log t$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ , for some constant  $c > 0$ . Suppose  $(\mu_t)_{t \geq t_0}$  are a family of Borel measures on  $\mathbb{R}^d$ , and for each  $t \geq t_0$  let  $\mathcal{R}_t$  be a Poisson process with intensity measure  $t\mu_t$  on  $\mathbb{R}^d$ . Suppose  $(W_t)_{t \geq t_0}$  are Borel sets in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ , and  $a > 0, b \geq 0$  are constants, such that (i)  $\kappa(W_t, r_t) = O(r_t^{-b})$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ , and (ii)  $\mu_t(B(x, s)) > as^d$  for all  $t \geq t_0, x \in W_t, s \in [r_t/2, r_t]$ . Let  $\varepsilon > 0$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[(F_t(W_t, \mathcal{R}_t))^c] = O(t^{(b/d)-ac+\varepsilon})$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** This proof is similar to that of Lemma 6.3. Let  $\delta \in (0, 1/2)$ . Since  $\kappa(W_t, \delta r_t)$  is at most a constant times  $\kappa(W_t, r_t)$ , we can and do cover  $W_t$  by  $m_t$  balls of radius  $\delta r_t$ , with  $m_t = O(r_t^{-b}) = O(t^{b/d})$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . Let  $B_{1,t}, \dots, B_{m_t,t}$  be balls with radius  $(1 - \delta)r_t$  and with the same centres as the balls in the covering. Then for  $t > t_0$  and  $1 \leq i \leq m_t$  we have  $t\mu_t(B_{i,t}) \geq at(1 - \delta)^d r_t^d$  and so by Lemma 5.1(d), provided  $k < \delta at(1 - \delta)^d r_t^d$  and  $tr_t^d > (1 - \delta)c \log t$  (which is true for large  $t$ ) we have

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[F_t(W_t, \mathcal{R}_t)^c] &\leq \mathbb{P}[\cup_{i=1}^{m_t} \{\mathcal{R}_t(B_{i,t}) < k\}] \leq m_t \mathbb{P}[Z_{at(1-\delta)^d r_t^d} \leq \delta(1-\delta)^d a t r_t^d] \\ &\leq m_t \exp(- (1-\delta)^d a t r_t^d H(\delta)) \\ &= O(t^{b/d} t^{-a(1-\delta)^{d+1} H(\delta)c}) \text{ as } t \rightarrow \infty. \end{aligned}$$

Since we can choose  $\delta$  so that  $a(1-\delta)^{d+1} H(\delta)c > ac - \varepsilon$ , the result follows. □

**7.2 Coverage of a region in a hyperplane by a Boolean model in a half-space**

In this subsection, assume that  $d \geq 2$ . Let  $\zeta \in \mathbb{R}$ ,  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ , and assume that  $(r_t)_{t>0}$  satisfies

$$\frac{f_0 t \theta_d r_t^d}{2} - \left(\frac{d-1}{d}\right) \log(t f_0) - (d+k-3+1/d) \log \log t \rightarrow \zeta \text{ as } t \rightarrow \infty, \tag{7.15}$$

so that for some function  $h(t)$  tending to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ ,

$$\exp(-\theta_d f_0 t r_t^d / 2) = (t f_0)^{-(d-1)/d} (\log t)^{-d-k+3-1/d} e^{-\zeta+h(t)}. \tag{7.16}$$

For  $t > 0$  let  $\mathcal{U}_t$  denote a homogeneous Poisson process on the half-space  $\mathbb{H} := \mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times [0, \infty)$  of intensity  $t f_0$ . Recall from (3.2) the definition of  $c_{d,k}$ . The next result determines the limiting probability of covering a bounded region  $\Omega \times \{0\}$  in the hyperplane  $\partial \mathbb{H} := \mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times \{0\}$  by balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on  $\mathcal{U}_t$ , or of covering the  $r_t$ -neighbourhood of  $\Omega \times \{0\}$  in  $\mathbb{H}$ . It is crucial for dealing with boundary regions in the proof of Theorems 3.1, 3.2 and 3.3. In it,  $|\Omega|$  denotes the  $(d-1)$ -dimensional Lebesgue measure of  $\Omega$ .

**Lemma 7.4** *Let  $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  and (for each  $t > 0$ )  $\Omega_t \subset \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  be closed and Riemann measurable, with  $\Omega_t \subset \Omega$  for each  $t > 0$ . Assume (7.15) holds for some  $\zeta \in (-\infty, \infty)$  and also  $\limsup_{t \rightarrow \infty} (t r_t^d / (\log t)) < \infty$ .*

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(\Omega \times \{0\}, \mathcal{U}_t)]) = \exp(-c_{d,k} |\Omega| e^{-\zeta}). \tag{7.17}$$

Also, given  $a \in (0, \infty)$  and  $\delta_t > 0$  for each  $t > 0$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t((\Omega_t \times \{0\}) \cup (((\partial \Omega_t) \oplus B_{(d-1)}(o, \delta_t)) \times [0, a r_t]), \mathcal{U}_t) \\ \setminus F_t(\Omega_t \times [0, a r_t], \mathcal{U}_t)]) = 0. \end{aligned} \tag{7.18}$$

**Remark 7.5** Usually we shall use Lemma 7.4 in the case where  $\zeta < \infty$ . In this case the extra condition  $\limsup_{t \rightarrow \infty} (t r_t^d / (\log t)) < \infty$  is automatic. When  $\zeta = \infty$ , in (7.17) we use the convention  $e^{-\infty} := 0$ .

The following terminology and notation will be used in the proof of Lemma 7.4, and again later on. We use bold face for vectors in  $\mathbb{R}^d$  here. Given  $\mathbf{x} \in \mathbb{R}^d$ , we let  $\pi_d(\mathbf{x})$  denote the  $d$ -th co-ordinate of  $\mathbf{x}$ , and refer to  $\pi_d(\mathbf{x})$  as the *height* of  $\mathbf{x}$ . Given  $\mathbf{x}_1 \in \mathbb{R}^d, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d \in \mathbb{R}^d$ , and  $r > 0$ , if  $\cap_{i=1}^d \partial B(\mathbf{x}_i, r)$  consists of exactly two points, we refer to these as  $\mathbf{p}_r(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$  and  $\mathbf{q}_r(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$  with  $\mathbf{p}_r(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$  at a smaller height than  $\mathbf{q}_r(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$  (or if they are at the same height, take  $\mathbf{p}_r(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d) < \mathbf{q}_r(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$  in the lexicographic ordering). Define the indicator function

$$h_r(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d) := \mathbf{1}\{\pi_d(\mathbf{x}_1) \leq \min(\pi_d(\mathbf{x}_2), \dots, \pi_d(\mathbf{x}_d))\} \\ \times \mathbf{1}\{\#\left(\cap_{i=1}^d \partial B(\mathbf{x}_i, r)\right) = 2\}\mathbf{1}\{\pi_d(\mathbf{x}_1) < \pi_d(\mathbf{q}_r(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d))\}. \tag{7.19}$$

**Proof of Lemma 7.4** Assume for now that  $\zeta < \infty$ . Considering the slices of balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on points of  $\mathcal{Q}_t$  that intersect the hyperplane  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times \{0\}$ , we have a  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional Boolean model with (in the notation of Lemma 7.2)

$$\delta = r_t, \quad \lambda = t f_0 r_t, \quad \alpha = \frac{\theta_d}{2}, \quad \mathbb{E}[Y^{d-1}] = \frac{\theta_d}{2\theta_{d-1}}, \quad \mathbb{E}[Y^{d-2}] = \frac{\theta_{d-1}}{2\theta_{d-2}}.$$

To see the moment assertions here, note that here  $Y = (1 - U^2)^{1/2}$  with  $U$  uniformly distributed over  $[0, 1]$ , so that  $\theta_{d-1}Y^{d-1}$  is the  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional Lebesgue measure of a  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional affine slice through the unit ball at distance  $U$  from its centre, and an application of Fubini’s theorem gives the above assertions for  $\alpha := \theta_{d-1}\mathbb{E}[Y^{d-1}]$  and hence for  $\mathbb{E}[Y^{d-1}]$ ; the same argument in a lower dimension gives the assertion regarding  $\mathbb{E}[Y^{d-2}]$ . (We take  $\theta_0 = 1$  so the assertion for  $\mathbb{E}[Y^{d-2}]$  is valid for  $d = 2$  as well.)

By (7.15), as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  we have  $r_t \sim (2 - 2/d)^{1/d} (\theta_d t f_0)^{-1/d} (\log t)^{1/d}$ , and therefore  $\lambda \sim (2 - 2/d)^{1/d} \theta_d^{-1/d} (t f_0)^{1-1/d} (\log t)^{1/d}$  so that

$$\log \lambda = (1 - 1/d) \log(t f_0) + d^{-1} \log \log t + d^{-1} \log \left( \frac{2 - 2/d}{\theta_d} \right) + o(1).$$

Hence,  $\log \lambda = (\log t)(1 - 1/d)(1 + g(t))$  for some function  $g(t)$  tending to zero.

Therefore  $\log \log \lambda = \log \log t + \log(1 - 1/d) + o(1)$ . Checking (7.6) here, we have

$$\alpha \delta^{d-1} \lambda - \log \lambda - (d + k - 3) \log \log \lambda \\ = (\theta_d/2) f_0 t r_t^d - (1 - 1/d) \log(t f_0) - (d + k - 3 + 1/d) \log \log t \\ - d^{-1} \log((2 - 2/d)/\theta_d) - (d + k - 3) \log(1 - 1/d) + o(1), \tag{7.20}$$

so by using (7.15) again we obtain that

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\alpha \delta^{d-1} \lambda - \log \lambda - (d + k - 3) \log \log \lambda) \\ = \zeta - d^{-1} \log(2/\theta_d) - (d + k - 3 + d^{-1}) \log(1 - 1/d).$$

Also  $(\mathbb{E}[Y^{d-2}])^{d-1}/(\mathbb{E}[Y^{d-1}])^{d-2} = \theta_d^{2-d}\theta_{d-1}^{2d-3}\theta_{d-2}^{1-d}/2$ , so (7.17) follows by Lemma 7.2 and (3.2).

Having now verified (7.17) in the case where  $\zeta < \infty$ , we can easily deduce (7.17) in the other case too.

It remains to prove (7.18); we now consider general  $\zeta \in (0, \infty]$ . Let  $E_t$  be the (exceptional) event that there exist  $d$  distinct points  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d$  of  $\mathcal{U}_t$  such that  $\bigcap_{i=1}^d \partial B(\mathbf{x}_i, r_t)$  has non-empty intersection with the hyperplane  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times \{0\}$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[E_t] = 0$ .

Suppose that the event displayed in (7.18) occurs, and that  $E_t$  does not. Let  $\mathbf{w}$  be a location of minimal height (i.e.,  $d$ -coordinate) in the closure of  $V_t(\mathcal{U}_t) \cap (\Omega_t \times [0, ar_t])$ . Since we assume  $F_t((\partial\Omega_t) \oplus B_{(d-1)}(o, \delta_t)) \times [0, ar_t], \mathcal{U}_t$  occurs,  $\mathbf{w}$  must lie in  $\Omega_t^o \times [0, ar_t]$ . Also we claim that  $\mathbf{w}$  must be a ‘corner’ given by the meeting point of the boundaries of exactly  $d$  balls of radius  $r_t$  centred at points of  $\mathcal{U}_t$ , located at  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d$  say, with  $\mathbf{x}_1$  the lowest of these  $d$  points, and with  $\#(\bigcap_{i=1}^d \partial B(\mathbf{x}_i, r_t)) = 2$ , and  $\mathbf{w} \in V_t(\mathcal{U}_t \setminus \{\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d\})$ .

Indeed, if  $\mathbf{w}$  is not at the boundary of any such ball, then for some  $\delta > 0$  we have  $B(\mathbf{w}, \delta) \subset V_t(\mathcal{U}_t)$ , and then we could find a location in  $V_t(\mathcal{U}_t) \cap (\Omega_t \times [0, ar_t])$  lower than  $\mathbf{w}$ , a contradiction. Next, suppose instead that  $\mathbf{w}$  lies at the boundary of fewer than  $d$  such balls. Then denoting by  $L$  the intersection of the supporting hyperplanes at  $\mathbf{w}$  of each of these balls, we have that  $L$  is an affine subspace of  $\mathbb{R}^d$ , of dimension at least 1. Take  $\delta > 0$  small enough so that  $B(\mathbf{w}, \delta)$  does not intersect any of the boundaries of balls of radius  $r_t$  centred at points of  $\mathcal{U}_t$ , other than those which meet at  $\mathbf{w}$ . Taking  $\mathbf{w}' \in L \cap B(\mathbf{w}, \delta) \setminus \{\mathbf{w}\}$  such that  $\mathbf{w}'$  is at least as low as  $\mathbf{w}$ , we have that  $\mathbf{w}'$  lies in the interior of  $V_t(\mathcal{U}_t)$ . Hence for some  $\delta' > 0$ ,  $B(\mathbf{w}', \delta') \subset V_t(\mathcal{U}_t)$  and we can find a location in  $B(\mathbf{w}', \delta')$  that is lower than  $\mathbf{w}$ , yielding a contradiction for this case too. Finally, with probability 1 there is no set of more than  $d$  points of  $\mathcal{U}_t$  such that the boundaries of balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on these points have non-empty intersection, so  $\mathbf{w}$  is not at the boundary of more than  $d$  such balls. Thus we have justified the claim.

Moreover  $\mathbf{w}$  must be the point  $\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$  rather than  $\mathbf{p}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$ , because otherwise by extending the line segment from  $\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$  to  $\mathbf{p}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$  slightly beyond  $\mathbf{p}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)$  we could find a point in  $V_t(\mathcal{U}_t) \cap (\Omega_t \times [0, ar_t])$  lower than  $\mathbf{w}$ , contradicting the statement that  $\mathbf{w}$  is a location of minimal height in the closure of  $V_t(\mathcal{U}_t) \cap (\Omega_t \times [0, ar_t])$ . Moreover,  $\mathbf{w}$  must be strictly higher than  $\mathbf{x}_1$ , since if  $\pi_d(\mathbf{w}) \leq \min(\pi_d(\mathbf{x}_1), \dots, \pi_d(\mathbf{x}_d))$ , then locations just below  $\mathbf{w}$  would lie in  $V_t(\mathcal{U}_t) \cap (\Omega_t \times [0, ar_t])$ , contradicting the statement that  $\mathbf{w}$  is a point of minimal height in the closure of  $V_t(\mathcal{U}_t \cap (\Omega_t \times [0, ar_t]))$ . Hence,  $h_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d) = 1$ , where  $h_r(\cdot)$  was defined at (7.19).

Note that there is a constant  $c' := c'(d, a) > 0$  such that for any  $\mathbf{x} \in \mathbb{H}$  with  $0 \leq \pi_d(\mathbf{x}) \leq a$  we have that  $|B(\mathbf{x}, 1) \cap \mathbb{H}| \geq (\theta_d/2) + c'\pi_d(\mathbf{x})$ . Hence for any  $r > 0$ , and any  $\mathbf{x} \in \mathbb{H}$  with  $0 \leq \pi_d(\mathbf{x}) \leq ar$ ,

$$|B(\mathbf{x}, r) \cap \mathbb{H}| = r^d |B(r^{-1}\mathbf{x}, 1) \cap \mathbb{H}| \geq (\theta_d/2)r^d + c'r^{d-1}\pi_d(\mathbf{x}).$$

Thus if the event displayed in (7.18) holds, then almost surely there exists at least one  $d$ -tuple of points  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d \in \mathcal{U}_t$ , such that  $h_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d) = 1$ , and moreover  $\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d) \in V_t(\mathcal{U}_t \setminus \{\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d\}) \cap (\Omega_t \times [0, ar_t])$ . By the Mecke formula (see

e.g. [19]), there is a constant  $c$  such that the expected number of such  $d$ -tuples is bounded above by

$$\begin{aligned}
 & c t^d (tr_t^d)^{k-1} \int_{\mathbb{H}} d\mathbf{x}_1 \cdots \int_{\mathbb{H}} d\mathbf{x}_d h_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d) \mathbf{1}\{\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d) \in \Omega_t \times [0, ar_t]\} \\
 & \times \exp(-(\theta_d/2) f_0 tr_t^d - c' f_0 tr_t^{d-1} \pi_d(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d))). \tag{7.21}
 \end{aligned}$$

Now we change variables to  $\mathbf{y}_i = r_t^{-1}(\mathbf{x}_i - \mathbf{x}_1)$  for  $2 \leq i \leq d$ , noting that

$$\begin{aligned}
 \pi_d(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d)) &= \pi_d(\mathbf{x}_1) + \pi_d(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(o, \mathbf{x}_2 - \mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_d - \mathbf{x}_1)) \\
 &= \pi_d(\mathbf{x}_1) + r_t \pi_d(\mathbf{q}_1(o, \mathbf{y}_2, \dots, \mathbf{y}_d)).
 \end{aligned}$$

Hence by (7.16), there is a constant  $c''$  such that the expression in (7.21) is at most

$$\begin{aligned}
 & c'' t^d (\log t)^{k-1} t^{-1+1/d} (\log t)^{3-(1/d)-d-k} r_t^{d(d-1)} \int_0^{ar_t} e^{-c' f_0 tr_t^{d-1} u} du \\
 & \times \int_{\mathbb{H}} \cdots \int_{\mathbb{H}} h_1(o, \mathbf{y}_2, \dots, \mathbf{y}_d) \exp(-c' f_0 tr_t^d \pi_d(\mathbf{q}_1(o, \mathbf{y}_2, \dots, \mathbf{y}_d))) d\mathbf{y}_2 \cdots d\mathbf{y}_d. \tag{7.22}
 \end{aligned}$$

In the last expression the first line is bounded by a constant times the expression

$$t^{d-1+1/d} r_t^{d(d-1)} (\log t)^{2-d-1/d} (tr_t^{d-1})^{-1} = (tr_t^d)^{d-2+1/d} (\log t)^{2-d-1/d},$$

which is bounded because we assume  $\limsup_{t \rightarrow \infty} (tr_t^d / (\log t)) < \infty$ . The second line of (7.22) tends to zero by dominated convergence because  $tr_t^d \rightarrow \infty$  by (7.15) and because the indicator function  $(\mathbf{z}_2, \dots, \mathbf{z}_d) \mapsto h_1(o, \mathbf{z}_2, \dots, \mathbf{z}_d)$  has bounded support and is zero when  $\pi_d(\mathbf{q}_1(o, \mathbf{z}_2, \dots, \mathbf{z}_d)) \leq 0$ . Therefore by Markov’s inequality we obtain (7.18).  $\square$

### 7.3 Polygons: proof of Theorem 3.2

Of the three theorems in Sect. 3, Theorem 3.2 has the simplest proof, so we give this one first. Thus, in this subsection, we set  $d = 2$ , take  $A$  to be polygonal with  $B = A$ , and take  $f \equiv f_0 \mathbf{1}_A$ , with  $f_0 := |A|^{-1}$ . Denote the vertices of  $A$  by  $q_1, \dots, q_\kappa$ , and the angles subtended at these vertices by  $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_\kappa$  respectively. Choose  $K \in (2, \infty)$  such that  $K \sin \alpha_i > 9$  for  $i = 1, \dots, \kappa$ .

For the duration of this subsection (and the next) we fix  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  and  $\beta \in \mathbb{R}$ . Assume we are given real numbers  $(r_t)_{t>0}$  satisfying

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\pi t f_0 r_t^2 - \log(t f_0) + (1 - 2k) \log \log t) = \beta. \tag{7.23}$$

Setting  $\zeta = \beta/2$ , this is the same as the condition (7.15) for  $d = 2$ .

Given any  $D \subset \mathbb{R}^2$ , and any point process  $\mathcal{X}$  in  $\mathbb{R}^2$ , and  $t > 0$ , define the ‘vacant region’  $V_t(\mathcal{X})$  and the event  $F_t(D, \mathcal{X})$  as at (7.13) and (7.14).

For  $t > 0$ , in this subsection we define the ‘corner regions’  $Q_t$  and  $Q_t^-$  by

$$Q_t := \cup_{j=1}^{\kappa} B(q_j, (K + 9)r_t); \quad Q_t^- := \cup_{j=1}^{\kappa} B(q_j, Kr_t).$$

**Lemma 7.6** *It is the case that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(Q_t \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)] \rightarrow 1$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** We have  $\kappa(Q_t \cap A, r_t) = O(1)$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . Also there exists  $a > 0$  such that for all large enough  $t$ , all  $s \in [r_t/2, r_t]$  and  $x \in Q_t \cap A$ , we have  $f_0|B(x, s) \cap A| \geq ar_t^d$ . Thus we can apply Lemma 7.3, taking  $W_t = Q_t \cap A$ , and  $\mu_t(\cdot) = f_0|\cdot \cap A|$ , with  $b = 0$ , to deduce that  $\mathbb{P}[(F_t(W_t, \mathcal{P}_t))^c]$  is  $O(t^{-\delta})$  for some  $\delta > 0$ , and hence tends to 0. □

**Lemma 7.7** *It is the case that*

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(\partial A \setminus Q_t^-, \mathcal{P}_t)]) = \exp(-c_{2,\kappa}|\partial A|e^{-\beta/2}). \tag{7.24}$$

Also,

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(3r_t)} \cup \partial A \cup (Q_t \cap A), \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)]) = 0. \tag{7.25}$$

**Proof** Denote the line segments making up  $\partial A$  by  $I_1, \dots, I_\kappa$ , and for  $t > 0$  and  $1 \leq i \leq \kappa$  set  $I_{t,i} := I_i \setminus Q_t^-$ .

Let  $i, j, k \in \{1, \dots, \kappa\}$  be such that  $i \neq j$  and the edges  $I_i$  and  $I_j$  are both incident to  $q_k$ . If  $x \in I_{t,i}$  and  $y \in I_{t,j}$ , then  $\|x - y\| \geq (Kr_t) \sin \alpha_k \geq 9r_t$ . Hence the events  $F_t(I_{t,1}, \mathcal{P}_t), \dots, F_t(I_{t,\kappa}, \mathcal{P}_t)$  are mutually independent. Therefore

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(\partial A \setminus Q_t^-, \mathcal{P}_t)] = \prod_{i=1}^{\kappa} \mathbb{P}[F_t(I_{t,i}, \mathcal{P}_t)],$$

and by Lemma 7.4 this converges to the right hand side of (7.24).

Now we prove (7.25). For  $t > 0$ , and  $i \in \{1, 2, \dots, \kappa\}$ , let  $S_{t,i}$  denote the rectangular block of dimensions  $|I_{t,i}| \times 3r_t$ , consisting of all points in  $A$  at perpendicular distance at most  $3r_t$  from  $I_{t,i}$ . Let  $\partial_{\text{side}}S_{t,i}$  denote the union of the two ‘short’ edges of the boundary  $S_{t,i}$ , i.e. the two edges bounding  $S_{t,i}$  which are perpendicular to  $I_{t,i}$ .

Then  $A \setminus (A^{(3r_t)} \cup Q_t) \subset \cup_{i=1}^{\kappa} S_{t,i}$ , and also  $(\partial_{\text{side}}S_{t,i} \oplus B(o, r_t)) \subset Q_t$  for  $1 \leq i \leq \kappa$ , so that

$$\begin{aligned} & F_t(A^{(3r_t)} \cup \partial A \cup (Q_t \cap A), \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t) \\ & \subset \cup_{i=1}^{\kappa} [F_t(I_{t,i} \cup (\partial_{\text{side}}S_{t,i} \oplus B(o, r_t)), \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(S_{t,i}, \mathcal{P}_t)]. \end{aligned}$$

For  $i \in \{1, \dots, \kappa\}$ , let  $I'_{t,i}$  denote an interval of length  $|I_{t,i}|$  contained in the  $x$ -axis. By a rotation one sees that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(I_{t,i} \cup (\partial_{\text{side}}S_{t,i} \oplus B(o, r_t)), \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(S_{t,i}, \mathcal{P}_t)]$  is at

most

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t((I'_{t,i} \times \{0\}) \cup (((\partial I'_{t,i}) \oplus [-r_t, r_t]) \times [0, 3r_t]), \mathcal{U}_t) \setminus F_t(I'_{t,i} \times [0, 3r_t], \mathcal{U}_t)],$$

where  $\mathcal{U}_t$  is as in Lemma 7.4. By (7.18) from that result, this probability tends to zero, which gives us (7.25). □

**Proof of Theorem 3.2** Let  $\beta \in \mathbb{R}$  and suppose  $(r_t)_{t>0}$  satisfies (7.23). Then

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\pi f_0 t r_t^2 - \log(t f_0) - k \log \log t) = \begin{cases} \beta & \text{if } k = 1 \\ +\infty & \text{if } k \geq 2. \end{cases}$$

Hence by (3.6) from Proposition 3.4 (taking  $B = A$  there and using (6.4)),

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)] = \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[\tilde{R}_{Z_t, k} \leq r_t] = \begin{cases} \exp(-|A|e^{-\beta}) & \text{if } k = 1 \\ 1 & \text{if } k \geq 2. \end{cases} \tag{7.26}$$

Observe that  $\{F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t) \subset F_t(A^{(3r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)$ . We claim that

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(3r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)] \rightarrow 0 \quad \text{as } t \rightarrow \infty. \tag{7.27}$$

Indeed, given  $\varepsilon > 0$ , for large  $t$  the probability on the left side of (7.27) is bounded by  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(r_t)} \setminus A^{[\varepsilon]}, \mathcal{P}_t)^c]$  (the set  $A^{[\varepsilon]}$  was defined in Sect. 2), and by (3.6) from Proposition 3.4 (as in (7.26) but now taking  $B = A \setminus A^{[\varepsilon]}$  in Proposition 3.4), the latter probability tends to a limit which can be made arbitrarily small by the choice of  $\varepsilon$ .

Also, by (7.24) and Lemma 7.6,

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(\partial A, \mathcal{P}_t)]) = \exp(-c_{2,k} | \partial A | e^{-\beta/2}). \tag{7.28}$$

Using (7.25) followed by Lemma 7.6, we obtain that

$$\begin{aligned} \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)] &= \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(3r_t)} \cup \partial A \cup (Q_t \cap A), \mathcal{P}_t)] \\ &= \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(3r_t)} \cup \partial A, \mathcal{P}_t)], \end{aligned} \tag{7.29}$$

provided these limits exist.

By (7.27), (7.26) still holds with  $A^{(r_t)}$  replaced by  $A^{(3r_t)}$  on the left. Also, the events  $F_t(\partial A, \mathcal{P}_t)$  and  $F_t(A^{(3r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)$  are independent since the first of these events is determined by the configuration of Poisson points distant at most  $r_t$  from  $\partial A$ , while the second event is determined by the Poisson points distant more than  $2r_t$  from  $\partial A$ . Therefore the limit in (7.29) does indeed exist, and is the product of the limits arising in (7.26) and (7.28).

Since  $F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t) = \{R'_{t,k} \leq r_t\}$ , this gives us the second equality of (3.4), and we then obtain the first equality of (3.4) by using Lemma 7.1. □

### 7.4 Polyhedra: proof of Theorem 3.3

Now suppose that  $d = 3$  and  $A = B$  is a polyhedron with  $f \equiv f_0 \mathbf{1}_A$ , where  $f_0 = 1/|A|$ . Fix  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  and  $\beta \in \mathbb{R}$ . Recall that  $\alpha_1$  denotes the smallest edge angle of  $A$ . Throughout this subsection, we assume that we are given  $(r_t)_{t>0}$  with the following limiting behaviour as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ :

$$(\pi \wedge 2\alpha_1) f_0 t r_t^3 - \log(t f_0) - \beta = \begin{cases} (3k - 1) \log \log t + o(1) & \text{if } \alpha_1 \leq \pi/2 \\ \left(\frac{1+3k}{2}\right) \log \log t + o(1) & \text{if } \alpha_1 > \pi/2. \end{cases} \tag{7.30}$$

For  $D \subset \mathbb{R}^3$  and  $\mathcal{X}$  a point set in  $\mathbb{R}^3$ , define the region  $V_t(\mathcal{X})$  and event  $F_t(D, \mathcal{X})$  by (7.13) and (7.14) as before, now with  $(r_t)_{t>0}$  satisfying (7.30).

To prove Theorem 3.3, our main task is to determine  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)]$ . Our strategy for this goes as follows. We shall consider *reduced faces* and *reduced edges* of  $A$ , obtained by removing a region within distance  $Kr_t$  of the boundary of each face/edge, for a suitable constant  $K$ . Then the events that different reduced faces and reduced edges are covered are mutually independent. Observing that the intersection of  $\mathcal{P}_t$  with a face or edge is a lower-dimensional SPBM, and using Lemma 7.2, we shall determine the limiting probability that the reduced faces and edges are covered.

If  $F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)$  does not occur but all reduced faces and all reduced edges are covered, then the uncovered region must either meet the region  $A^{(3r_t)}$ , or go near (but not intersect) one of the reduced faces, or go near (but not intersect) one of the reduced edges, or go near one of the vertices. We shall show in turn that each of these possibilities has vanishing probability.

The following lemma will help us deal with the regions near the faces of  $A$ .

**Lemma 7.8** *Let  $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^2$  and (for each  $t > 0$ )  $\Omega_t \subset \mathbb{R}^2$  be closed and Riemann measurable, with  $\Omega_t \subset \Omega^o$  for each  $t > 0$ . Let  $\mathcal{U}_t$  be a homogeneous Poisson process of intensity  $t f_0$  in  $\mathbb{H}$ . Assume (7.30) holds. Then*

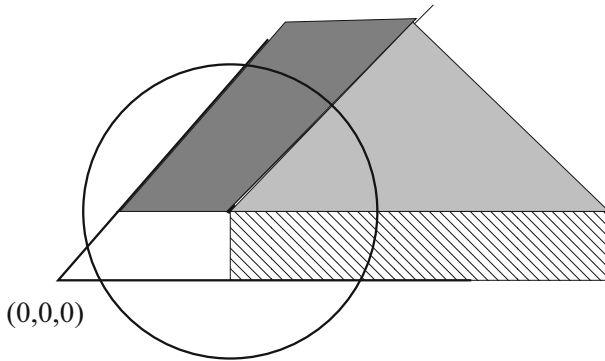
$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(\Omega \times \{0\}, \mathcal{U}_t)]) = \begin{cases} \exp(-c_{3,k} |\Omega| e^{-2\beta/3}), & \text{if } \alpha_1 > \pi/2 \\ & \text{or } \alpha_1 = \pi/2, k = 1 \\ 1 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \tag{7.31}$$

Also in all cases, given  $a \in (0, \infty)$  and  $\delta_t > 0$  for each  $t > 0$ ,

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t((\Omega_t \times \{0\}) \cup ((\partial\Omega_t \oplus B_{(2)}(o, \delta_t)) \times [0, ar_t]), \mathcal{U}_t) \setminus F_t(\Omega_t \times [0, ar_t], \mathcal{U}_t)]) = 0. \tag{7.32}$$

**Proof** In the case where  $\alpha_1 > \pi/2$  or  $\alpha_1 = \pi/2, k = 1$  the condition (7.30) implies that (7.15) holds (for  $d = 3$ ) with  $\zeta := 2\beta/3$ . In the other case (with  $\alpha_1 < \pi/2$  or  $\alpha_1 = \pi/2, k > 1$ ) the condition (7.30) implies that (7.15) holds (for  $d = 3$ ) with





**Fig. 2** We show only the 2nd and 3rd co-ordinates. In the proof of Lemma 7.9, we lower bound the volume of the intersection of the circle (representing a ball of unit radius) with the leftmost wedge shown, by the sum of the volumes of the union of the three shaded regions, each intersected with the ball/circle

$\zeta := +\infty$ , and also  $\limsup_{t \rightarrow \infty} (tr_i^3 / \log t) < \infty$ . Therefore we can deduce the result (in both cases) from Lemma 7.4. □

In this subsection we use bold face to indicate vectors in  $\mathbb{R}^3$ . For  $i = 1, 2, 3$ , we let  $\pi_i : \mathbb{R}^3 \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  denote projection onto the  $i$ th coordinate. For  $\mathbf{x} \in \mathbb{R}^3$  we shall sometimes refer to  $\pi_2(\mathbf{x})$  and  $\pi_3(\mathbf{x})$  as the ‘depth’ and ‘height’ of  $\mathbf{x}$ , respectively.

For  $r > 0$  and for triples  $(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) \in (\mathbb{R}^3)^3$ , we define the function  $h_r(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})$  and (when  $h_r(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) = 1$ ) the points  $\mathbf{p}_r(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})$  and  $\mathbf{q}_r(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})$ , as at (7.19), now specialising to  $d = 3$ .

For  $\alpha \in (0, 2\pi)$ , let  $\mathbb{W}_\alpha \subset \mathbb{R}^3$  be the wedge-shaped region

$$\mathbb{W}_\alpha := \{(x, r \cos \theta, r \sin \theta) : x \in \mathbb{R}, r \geq 0, \theta \in [0, \alpha]\}.$$

For  $\alpha \in (0, 2\pi)$  and  $t > 0$ , let  $\mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}$  be a homogeneous Poisson process in  $\mathbb{W}_\alpha$  of intensity  $t f_0$ .

**Lemma 7.9** (Lower bound for the volume of a ball within a wedge) *Let  $\alpha \in (0, \pi)$ , and  $u > 0$ . There is a constant  $c' = c'(\alpha, u) \in (0, \infty)$  such that for any  $r > 0$  and any  $\mathbf{x} \in \mathbb{W}_\alpha \cap B(o, ur)$ ,*

$$|B(\mathbf{x}, r) \cap \mathbb{W}_\alpha| \geq (2\alpha/3)r^3 + c'r^2\pi_3(\mathbf{x}) + c'r^2(\pi_2(\mathbf{x}) - \pi_3(\mathbf{x}) \cot \alpha). \tag{7.33}$$

**Proof** As illustrated in Fig. 2, we can find a constant  $c' > 0$  such that for any  $\mathbf{x} \in \mathbb{W}_\alpha \cap B(o, u)$ , we have that

$$|B(\mathbf{x}, 1) \cap \mathbb{W}_\alpha| \geq (2\alpha/3) + c'(\pi_3(\mathbf{x}) + (\pi_2(\mathbf{x}) - (\pi_3(\mathbf{x})/\tan \alpha))).$$

Also  $|B(\mathbf{x}, r) \cap \mathbb{W}_\alpha| = r^3|B(r^{-1}\mathbf{x}, 1) \cap \mathbb{W}_\alpha|$  by scaling, and it is then straightforward to deduce (7.33). □

In the next three lemmas, we take  $I$  to be an arbitrary fixed compact interval in  $\mathbb{R}$ , and then, given  $\alpha \in (0, 2\pi)$  and  $b \geq 0$ , set

$$\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,b} := \{(x_1, x_2, x_3) \in \mathbb{W}_\alpha : x_1 \in I, x_2^2 + x_3^2 \leq b^2\}.$$

Also, writing  $I = [a_1, a_2]$ , let  $I'_t := [a_1 - r_t, a_2 + r_t]$  (a slight extension of the interval  $I$ ). Let  $\mathbb{W}'_{\alpha,b,t} := \{(x_1, x_2, x_3) \in \mathbb{W}_\alpha : x_1 \in I'_t, x_2^2 + x_3^2 \leq b^2\}$ .

The next lemma will help us to show that if the part of  $\partial A$  near to a given edge is covered, then the interior of  $A$  near that edge is also likely to be covered.

**Lemma 7.10** *Let  $\alpha \in [\alpha_1, \pi)$ ,  $a \in (1, \infty)$ . Then*

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t((\partial\mathbb{W}_\alpha) \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}) \setminus F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t})]) = 0. \tag{7.34}$$

**Proof** First, note that  $\kappa(\mathbb{W}'_{\alpha,ar_t,t} \setminus \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, r_t) = O(1)$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ , and hence by taking the measure  $\mu_t$  to be  $f_0|\cdot \cap \mathbb{W}_\alpha|$  in Lemma 7.3,

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(\mathbb{W}'_{\alpha,ar_t,t} \setminus \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t})] = 1. \tag{7.35}$$

Let  $E_t$  here be the (exceptional) event that there exist three distinct points  $\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}$  of  $\mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}$  such that  $\partial B(\mathbf{x}, r_t) \cap \partial B(\mathbf{y}, r_t) \cap \partial B(\mathbf{z}, r_t)$  has non-empty intersection with the plane  $\mathbb{R}^2 \times \{0\}$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[E_t] = 0$ .

Suppose that event  $F_t((\partial\mathbb{W}_\alpha) \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}) \setminus F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t})$  occurs, and that  $F_t(\mathbb{W}'_{\alpha,ar_t,t} \setminus \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t})$  occurs, and that  $E_t$  does not. Let  $\mathbf{w}$  be a point of minimal height in the closure of  $V_t(\mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}) \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}$ . Then  $\mathbf{w} \in \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t} \setminus \partial\mathbb{W}_\alpha$ , and  $\mathbf{w} = \mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})$  for some triple  $(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})$  of points of  $\mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}$ , satisfying  $h_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) = 1$ , where  $h_{r_t}(\cdot)$  was defined at (7.19). Also  $\mathbf{w}$  is covered by fewer than  $k$  of the balls centred on the other points of  $\mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}$ . Hence by Markov’s inequality,

$$\begin{aligned} &\mathbb{P}[F_t((\partial\mathbb{W}_\alpha) \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,2ar_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}) \cap F_t(\mathbb{W}'_{\alpha,ar_t,t} \setminus \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}) \setminus F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t})] \\ &\leq \mathbb{P}[N_t \geq 1] \leq \mathbb{E}[N_t], \end{aligned} \tag{7.36}$$

where we set

$$N_t := \sum_{\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z} \in \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}}^{\neq} h_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) \mathbf{1}\{\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) \in \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}\} \mathbf{1}\{\mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}(B(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}), r_t)) < k\},$$

and  $\sum^{\neq}$  means we are summing over triples of distinct points in  $\mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}$ . By the Mecke formula,  $\mathbb{E}[N_t]$  is bounded by a constant times

$$\begin{aligned} &t^3 (tr_t^3)^{k-1} \int_{\mathbb{W}} d\mathbf{x} \int_{\mathbb{W}} d\mathbf{y} \int_{\mathbb{W}} dz h_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) \mathbf{1}\{\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) \in \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}\} \\ &\times \exp(-tf_0|B(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}), r_t) \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}|). \end{aligned}$$

Hence by (7.33), there is a constant  $c$  such that  $\mathbb{E}[N_t]$  is bounded by

$$\begin{aligned}
 & ct^3 (tr_t^3)^{k-1} \int_{\mathbb{W}_\alpha} d\mathbf{x} \int_{\mathbb{W}_\alpha} d\mathbf{y} \int_{\mathbb{W}_\alpha} dz h_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) \mathbf{1}\{\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) \in \mathbb{W}_{\alpha, ar_t}\} \\
 & \times \exp \left\{ -(2\alpha/3) f_0 tr_t^3 - c' f_0 tr_t^2 \pi_3(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})) \right. \\
 & \left. - c' f_0 tr_t^2 [\pi_2(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})) - \pi_3(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})) \cot \alpha] \right\}. \tag{7.37}
 \end{aligned}$$

We claim that (7.30) implies

$$\exp(-(2\alpha/3) f_0 tr_t^3) = O(t^{-1/3} (\log t)^{(1/3)-k}). \tag{7.38}$$

Indeed, if  $\alpha = \alpha_1 \leq \pi/2$ , then the expression on the left side of (7.38) divided by the one on the right, tends to a finite constant. Otherwise, this ratio tends to zero.

Now we write  $c''$  for  $c' f_0$ . By (7.30), (7.38) and the assumption that  $I$  is a bounded interval, we obtain that  $\mathbb{E}[N_t]$  is bounded by a constant times

$$\begin{aligned}
 & t^3 (\log t)^{k-1} t^{-1/3} (\log t)^{(1/3)-k} \int_{\mathbb{W}_\alpha} d\mathbf{z} \int_{\mathbb{W}_\alpha} d\mathbf{y} \int_0^{2ar_t} du \int_0^{2ar_t} dv h_{r_t}((0, u, v), \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) \\
 & \times \mathbf{1}\{\mathbf{q}_{r_t}((0, u, v), \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) \in \mathbb{W}_\alpha\} \\
 & \times \exp \left\{ -c'' tr_t^2 [v + (\pi_3(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}((0, u, v), \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})) - v)] \right\} \\
 & \times \exp \left\{ -c'' tr_t^2 [\pi_2(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}((0, u, v), \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})) - \pi_3(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}((0, u, v), \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})) \cot \alpha] \right\}.
 \end{aligned}$$

Writing  $\mathbf{u} := (0, u, v)$ , and changing variables to  $\mathbf{y}' = r_t^{-1}(\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{u})$ , and  $\mathbf{z}' = r_t^{-1}(\mathbf{z} - \mathbf{u})$ , we obtain that the previous expression is bounded by a constant times the quantity

$$\begin{aligned}
 b_t & := t^{8/3} (\log t)^{-2/3} r_t^6 \int_0^{2ar_t} dv \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} d\mathbf{z}' \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} d\mathbf{y}' \\
 & \times \int_0^{2ar_t} du f_t(u, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}') g_t(u, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}'),
 \end{aligned}$$

where we set

$$\begin{aligned}
 f_t(u, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}') & := e^{-c'' tr_t^2 v} \exp(-c'' tr_t^2 [\pi_3(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{u}, \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{z}')) - v]) \\
 & \times h_{r_t}(\mathbf{u}, \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{z}'),
 \end{aligned}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}
 g_t(u, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}') & := \mathbf{1}\{\pi_2(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{u}, \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{z}')) \\
 & > \pi_3(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{u}, \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{z}')) \cot \alpha\} \\
 & \times \exp\{-c'' tr_t^2 [\pi_2(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{u}, \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{z}')) \\
 & - \pi_3(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{u}, \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{z}')) \cot \alpha]\}.
 \end{aligned}$$

Observe that  $f_t(u, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}')$  does not depend on  $u$ , so it is equal to  $f_t(0, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}')$ . Therefore we can take this factor outside the innermost integral. Also, setting  $\mathbf{v} := (0, 0, v)$ , we have

$$\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{u}, \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{z}') = \mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{v} + r_t \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{v} + r_t \mathbf{z}') + (0, u, 0),$$

Therefore, setting  $\mathbf{w} := \mathbf{w}(t, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}') := \mathbf{q}_{r_t}(\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{v} + r_t \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{v} + r_t \mathbf{z}')$ , we have

$$g_t(u, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}') = \mathbf{1}\{\pi_2(\mathbf{w}) + u > \pi_3(\mathbf{w}) \cot \alpha_1\} \exp(-c'' tr_t^2(\pi_2(\mathbf{w}) + u - \pi_3(\mathbf{w}) \cot \alpha_1)).$$

Defining  $u_0 := u_0(t, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}') := \pi_3(\mathbf{w}) \cot \alpha_1 - \pi_2(\mathbf{w})$ , we obtain for the innermost integral that

$$\int_0^{2ar_t} g_t(u, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}') du = \int_{u_0}^{2ar_t} \exp(-c'' tr_t^2(u - u_0)) du = O((tr_t^2)^{-1}).$$

Also, we have

$$\begin{aligned} e^{c'' tr_t^2 v} f_t(0, v, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}') &= \exp[-c'' tr_t^2 \pi_3(\mathbf{q}_{r_t}(o, r_t \mathbf{y}', r_t \mathbf{z}'))] h_{r_t}(o, r_t \mathbf{y}', r_t \mathbf{z}') \\ &= \exp(-c'' tr_t^3 \pi_3(\mathbf{q}_1(o, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}')) h_1(o, \mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}')) \\ &=: \tilde{f}_t(\mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}'). \end{aligned}$$

Combining all this, we obtain that  $b_t$  is bounded by a constant times

$$t^{8/3} (\log t)^{-2/3} r_t^6 (tr_t^2)^{-1} \int_0^{2ar_t} e^{-c'' tr_t^2 v} dv \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} d\mathbf{z}' d\mathbf{y}' \tilde{f}_t(\mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}'),$$

and since the first integral is  $O((tr_t^2)^{-1})$ , this is bounded by a constant times

$$(tr_t^3)^{2/3} (\log t)^{-2/3} \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} \tilde{f}_t(\mathbf{y}', \mathbf{z}') d\mathbf{y}' d\mathbf{z}'.$$

By dominated convergence the last integral tends to zero, while by (7.30) the prefactor tends to a constant. Thus  $b_t \rightarrow 0$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . Therefore also  $\mathbb{E}[N_t] \rightarrow 0$ , and combined with (7.36) and (7.35), this yields (7.34). □

The next lemma helps us to show that if a given edge of  $A$  is covered, then the part of  $\partial A$  near that edge is also likely to be covered.

**Lemma 7.11** *Suppose  $\alpha_1 \leq \alpha \leq \pi/2$ . Let  $a > 1$ . Let  $\mathbb{F} := \partial \mathbb{H} := \mathbb{R}^2 \times \{0\}$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,0}, \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}) \setminus F_t(\mathbb{F} \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t})] \rightarrow 0$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** Given  $\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} \in \mathbb{R}^3$ , and  $r > 0$ , if  $\#(\partial B(\mathbf{x}, r) \cap \partial B(\mathbf{y}, r) \cap \mathbb{F}) = 2$ , then denote the two points of  $\partial B(\mathbf{x}, r) \cap \partial B(\mathbf{y}, r) \cap \mathbb{F}$ , taken in increasing lexicographic order, by  $\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_r(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$  and  $\tilde{\mathbf{q}}_r(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$ . Define the indicator functions

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{h}_r^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) &:= \mathbf{1}\{\pi_2(\mathbf{y}) \geq \pi_2(\mathbf{x})\} \mathbf{1}\{\#(\partial B(\mathbf{x}, r) \cap \partial B(\mathbf{y}, r) \cap \mathbb{F}) = 2\} \\ &\quad \times \mathbf{1}\{\pi_2(\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_r(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})) > \pi_2(\mathbf{x})\}; \\ \tilde{h}_r^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) &:= \mathbf{1}\{\pi_2(\mathbf{y}) \geq \pi_2(\mathbf{x})\} \mathbf{1}\{\#(\partial B(\mathbf{x}, r) \cap \partial B(\mathbf{y}, r) \cap \mathbb{F}) = 2\} \\ &\quad \times \mathbf{1}\{\pi_2(\tilde{\mathbf{q}}_r(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})) > \pi_2(\mathbf{x})\}. \end{aligned}$$

Let  $E_t$  here denote the (exceptional) event that there exist two distinct points  $\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} \in \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}$ , such that  $\partial B(\mathbf{x}, r_t) \cap \partial B(\mathbf{y}, r_t) \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,0} \neq \emptyset$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[E_t] = 0$ .

Suppose  $F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,0}, \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}) \setminus F_t(\mathbb{F} \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t})$  occurs, and  $E_t$  does not. Let  $\mathbf{w}$  be a location in  $\overline{V_t(\mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t})} \cap \mathbb{F}$  of minimal depth (i.e., minimal second coordinate). Then  $\mathbf{w}$  must lie at the intersection of the boundaries of balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on points  $\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} \in \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}$ , that is, at  $\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$  or at  $\tilde{\mathbf{q}}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$ . Moreover  $\mathbf{w}$  must be covered by at most  $k - 1$  other balls centred on points of  $\mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}$ . Also  $\pi_2(\mathbf{w}) > \min(\pi_2(\mathbf{x}), \pi_2(\mathbf{y}))$ ; otherwise, for sufficiently small  $\delta$  the location  $\mathbf{w} + (0, -\delta, 0)$  would be in  $\overline{V_t(\mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t})} \cap \mathbb{F}$  and have a smaller depth than  $\mathbf{w}$ . Finally, to have  $\mathbf{w} \in \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}$  we need  $\pi_2(\mathbf{w}) \leq ar_t$  and hence  $\min(\pi_2(\mathbf{x}), \pi_2(\mathbf{y})) \leq a$ . Therefore

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,0}, \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}) \setminus F_t(\mathbb{F} \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,ar_t}, \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t})] \leq \mathbb{P}[N_t^{(1)} \geq 1] + \mathbb{P}[N_t^{(2)} \geq 1], \tag{7.39}$$

where, with  $\sum_{\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} \in \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}}^{\neq}$  denoting summation over ordered pairs of distinct points of  $\mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}$ , we set

$$\begin{aligned} N_t^{(1)} &:= \sum_{\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} \in \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}}^{\neq} \tilde{h}_{r_t}^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) \mathbf{1}\{\mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}(B(\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}), r_t)) < k + 2\} \mathbf{1}\{\pi_2(\mathbf{x}) \leq ar_t\}; \\ N_t^{(2)} &:= \sum_{\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} \in \mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}}^{\neq} \tilde{h}_{r_t}^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) \mathbf{1}\{\mathcal{W}_{\alpha,t}(B(\tilde{\mathbf{q}}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}), r_t)) < k + 2\} \mathbf{1}\{\pi_2(\mathbf{x}) \leq ar_t\}. \end{aligned}$$

By the Mecke formula, and (7.33) from Lemma 7.9, with  $c' := c'(\alpha, a + 1)$  we have that  $\mathbb{E}[N_t^{(1)}]$  is bounded by a constant times

$$\begin{aligned} &t^2 (tr_t^3)^{k-1} \int_0^{ar_t} du \int_0^{r_t} dv \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} dy \tilde{h}_{r_t}^{(1)}((0, u, v), \mathbf{y}) \exp(-(2\alpha/3) f_0 tr_t^3 \\ &\quad - c' f_0 tr_t^2 \pi_2(\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_{r_t}((0, u, v), \mathbf{y}))), \end{aligned}$$

and there is a similar bound for  $\mathbb{E}[N_t^{(2)}]$ , involving  $\tilde{h}_{r_t}^{(2)}$  and  $\tilde{\mathbf{q}}_{r_t}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$ .

Consider  $\mathbb{E}[N_t^{(1)}]$  (we can treat  $\mathbb{E}[N_t^{(2)}]$  similarly), and write  $c''$  for  $c' f_0$ . By (7.38),  $\mathbb{E}[N_t^{(1)}]$  is bounded by a constant times

$$t^2 (tr_t^3)^{k-1} t^{-1/3} (\log t)^{(1/3)-k} \int_0^{ar_t} du \int_0^{r_t} dv \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} d\mathbf{y} \tilde{h}_{r_t}^{(1)}((0, u, v), \mathbf{y}) \times \exp(-c'' tr_t^2 \pi_2(\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_{r_t}((0, u, v), \mathbf{y}))). \tag{7.40}$$

Set  $\mathbf{u} := (0, u, v)$  and  $\mathbf{v} := (0, 0, v)$ . We shall now make the changes of variable  $u' = r_t^{-1}u, v' = r_t^{-1}v$  and  $\mathbf{y}' = r_t^{-1}(\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{u})$ . Also write  $\mathbf{u}' := (0, u', v') = r_t^{-1}\mathbf{u}$  and  $\mathbf{v}' := (0, 0, v')$ . Then

$$\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_{r_t}(\mathbf{u}, \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{y}') = r_t \tilde{\mathbf{p}}_1(\mathbf{u}', \mathbf{u}' + \mathbf{y}') = r_t \tilde{\mathbf{p}}_1(\mathbf{v}', \mathbf{v}' + \mathbf{y}') + r_t(0, u', 0).$$

Also

$$\tilde{h}_{r_t}^{(1)}(\mathbf{u}, \mathbf{u} + r_t \mathbf{y}') = \tilde{h}_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{u}', \mathbf{u}' + \mathbf{y}') = \tilde{h}_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{v}', \mathbf{v}' + \mathbf{y}').$$

By our changes of variable, the integral in (7.40) comes to

$$r_t^5 \int_0^a du' \int_0^1 dv' \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} d\mathbf{y}' \tilde{h}_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{v}', \mathbf{v}' + \mathbf{y}') \exp(-c'' tr_t^3 u' - c'' tr_t^3 \pi_2(\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_1(\mathbf{v}', \mathbf{v}' + \mathbf{y}'))).$$

Therefore since  $\int_0^a e^{-c'' tr_t^3 u'} du' = O((tr_t^3)^{-1})$ , and  $tr_t^3 = O(\log t)$  by (7.30), the expression in (7.40) is bounded by a constant times

$$t^{5/3} (\log t)^{-2/3} r_t^5 (tr_t^3)^{-1} \int_0^1 dv' \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} d\mathbf{y}' \tilde{h}_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{v}', \mathbf{v}' + \mathbf{y}') \exp(-c'' tr_t^3 \pi_2(\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_1(\mathbf{v}', \mathbf{v}' + \mathbf{y}'))).$$

For each  $v' \in [0, 1]$  the function  $\mathbf{y}' \mapsto \tilde{h}_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{v}', \mathbf{v}' + \mathbf{y}')$  has bounded support and is zero whenever  $\pi_2(\tilde{\mathbf{p}}_1(\mathbf{v}', \mathbf{v}' + \mathbf{y}')) \leq 0$  (because  $\pi_2(\mathbf{v}') = 0$ ). Therefore in the last displayed expression the integral tends to zero by dominated convergence, while the prefactor tends to a finite constant by (7.30).

Thus  $\mathbb{E}[N_t^{(1)}] \rightarrow 0$ , and one can show similarly that  $\mathbb{E}[N_t^{(2)}] \rightarrow 0$ . Hence by Markov’s inequality, the expression on the left hand side of (7.39) tends to zero.  $\square$

The next lemma enables us to reduce the limiting behaviour of the probability that a region near a given edge of  $A$  is covered, to that of the corresponding probability for the edge itself.

**Lemma 7.12** *Let  $a_0 > 1$ . If  $\alpha \in [\alpha_1, \pi/2]$ , then  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,0}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}) \setminus F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,a_0 r_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t})] \rightarrow 0$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . Moreover, if  $\alpha \in (\pi/2, 2\pi)$  then  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,a_0 r_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t})] \rightarrow 1$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** First suppose  $\alpha \leq \pi/2$ . It follows from Lemma 7.11 that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,0}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}) \setminus F_t((\partial \mathbb{W}_{\alpha}) \cap \mathbb{W}_{\alpha,a_0 r_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t})] \rightarrow 0$ . Combined with Lemma 7.10, this shows that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,0}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t}) \setminus F_t(\mathbb{W}_{\alpha,a_0 r_t}, \mathscr{W}_{\alpha,t})] \rightarrow 0$ .

Now suppose  $\alpha > \pi/2$ . In this case some of the geometrical arguments used in proving Lemmas 7.10 and 7.11 do not work. Instead we can use Lemma 7.3, taking  $\mu_t = f_0 |\cdot \cap \mathbb{W}_\alpha|$ , taking  $W_t$  of that result to be  $\mathbb{W}_{\alpha, a_0 r_t}$ , with  $a = 2f_0(\alpha \wedge \pi)/3$  and  $b = 1$ . By (7.30), we have  $tr_t^d \sim c \log t$  with  $c = 1/(f_0\pi)$ . Hence  $ac = 2(\alpha \wedge \pi)/(3\pi) > 1/3 = b/d$ , so application of Lemma 7.3 yields the claim.  $\square$

Using Lemma 6.12, choose  $K > 4$  such that for any edge or face  $\varphi$  of  $A$ , and any other face  $\varphi'$  of  $A$  with  $\varphi \setminus \varphi' \neq \emptyset$ , and all  $x \in \varphi^o$ , we have  $\text{dist}(x, \partial\varphi) \leq (K/3) \text{dist}(x, \varphi')$ . Denote the vertices of  $A$  by  $q_1, \dots, q_\nu$ , and the faces of  $A$  by  $H_1, \dots, H_m$ . Recall that we denote the edges of  $A$  by  $e_1, \dots, e_\kappa$  with the angle subtended by  $A$  at  $e_i$  denoted  $\alpha_i$  for each  $i$ . For  $1 \leq i \leq \kappa$ , denote the length of the edge  $e_i$  by  $|e_i|$ .

Define the ‘corner regions’

$$Q_t := \cup_{i=1}^\nu B(q_i, K(K+7)r_t) \cap A; \quad Q_t^+ := \cup_{i=1}^\nu B(q_i, K(K+9)r_t) \cap A. \quad (7.41)$$

**Lemma 7.13** *It is the case that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)] \rightarrow 1$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** As in the proof of Lemma 7.6, we can apply Lemma 7.3, taking  $W_t = Q_t^+$ , and  $\mu_t = f_0 |\cdot \cap A|$ , with  $b = 0$ .  $\square$

We now determine the limiting probability of coverage for any edge of  $A$ .

**Lemma 7.14** *Let  $i \in \{1, \dots, \kappa\}$ . If  $\alpha_i = \alpha_1 \leq \pi/2$  then*

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(e_i \setminus Q_t, \mathcal{P}_t)]) = \exp(-(|e_i|/(k-1)!)(\alpha_1/32)^{1/3} 3^{1-k} e^{-\beta/3}),$$

while if  $\alpha_i > \min(\alpha_1, \pi/2)$  then  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(e_i \setminus Q_t, \mathcal{P}_t)]) = 1$ .

**Proof** The portions of balls  $B(x, r_t)$ ,  $x \in \mathcal{P}_t$  that intersect the edge  $e_i$  form a spherical Poisson Boolean model in 1 dimension with (in the notation of Lemma 7.2)

$$\lambda = f_0(\alpha_i/2)tr_t^2; \quad \delta = r_t; \quad \alpha = \frac{\theta_3 \alpha_i / (2\pi)}{(\alpha_i / (2\pi))\pi} = 4/3.$$

By (7.30), as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  we have  $tf_0r_t^2 = (2\alpha_1 \wedge \pi)^{-2/3} (tf_0)^{1/3} (\log t)^{2/3} (1 + o(1))$ , so that

$$\log \lambda = (1/3) \log(\alpha_i^3 / (8(2\alpha_1 \wedge \pi)^2)) + (1/3) \log(tf_0) + (2/3) \log \log t + o(1),$$

and  $\log \log \lambda = \log \log t - \log 3 + o(1)$ . Therefore

$$\begin{aligned} \alpha \delta \lambda - \log \lambda - (k-1) \log \log \lambda &= (2/3) f_0 \alpha_i t r_t^3 - (1/3) \log(\alpha_i^3 / (8(2\alpha_1 \wedge \pi)^2)) \\ &\quad - (1/3) \log(tf_0) - (2/3) \log \log t - (k-1) \log \log t + (k-1) \log 3 + o(1), \end{aligned}$$

so that by (7.30) again,

$$\begin{aligned} & \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\alpha \delta \lambda - \log \lambda - (k - 1) \log \log \lambda) \\ &= \begin{cases} \beta/3 - (1/3) \log(\alpha_1/32) + (k - 1) \log 3 & \text{if } \alpha_i = \alpha_1 \leq \pi/2 \\ +\infty & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \end{aligned}$$

We then obtain the stated results by application of Lemma 7.2. □

Recall that  $H_1, \dots, H_m$  are the faces of  $\partial A$ . For  $t > 0$  we define the ‘edge regions’

$$\begin{aligned} W_t^- &:= \cup_{i=1}^k (e_i \oplus B(\mathbf{o}, (K + 1)r_t)) \cap A; & W_t^+ &:= \cup_{i=1}^k (e_i \oplus B(\mathbf{o}, Kr_t)) \cap A; \\ W_t^+ &:= \cup_{i=1}^k (e_i \oplus B(\mathbf{o}, (K + 4)r_t)) \cap A. \end{aligned} \tag{7.42}$$

The next lemma provides the limiting probability that the ‘interior regions’ of all of the faces of  $A$  are covered. Recall that  $|\partial_1 A|$  denotes the total area of all faces of  $A$ .

**Lemma 7.15** *Define event  $G_t := F_t(\partial A \setminus W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)$ . It is the case that*

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[G_t]) = \begin{cases} \exp(-c_{3,k} |\partial_1 A| e^{-2\beta/3}) & \text{if } \alpha_1 > \pi/2, \text{ or } \alpha_1 = \pi/2, k = 1 \\ 1 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \tag{7.43}$$

**Proof** We claim that the events  $F_t(H_1 \setminus W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t), \dots, F_t(H_m \setminus W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)$  are mutually independent. Indeed, for  $i, j \in \{1, \dots, m\}$  with  $i \neq j$ , if  $x \in H_i \setminus W_t^+$  then  $\text{dist}(x, \partial H_i) \geq Kr_t$  so by our choice of  $K$ ,  $\text{dist}(x, H_j) \geq 3r_t$ , so the  $r_t$ -neighbourhoods of  $H_1 \setminus W_t^+, \dots, H_m \setminus W_t^+$  are disjoint, and the independence follows. Therefore

$$\mathbb{P}[G_t] = \prod_{i=1}^m \mathbb{P}[F_t(H_i \setminus W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)].$$

By (7.31) from Lemma 7.8 and an obvious rotation, for  $1 \leq i \leq m$  we have

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(H_i \setminus W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)]) = \begin{cases} \exp(-c_{3,k} |H_i| e^{-2\beta/3}) & \text{if } \alpha_1 > \pi/2, \\ & \text{or } \alpha_1 = \pi/2, k = 1 \\ 1 & \text{otherwise,} \end{cases}$$

and the result follows. □

Next we estimate the probability that there is an uncovered region near to a face of  $A$  but not touching that face, and not close to any edge of  $A$ .

**Lemma 7.16** *Define event  $E_t^{(2)} = F_t(\partial A \cup W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A \setminus A^{(3r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[E_t^{(2)}] \rightarrow 0$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*



**Proof** For  $1 \leq i \leq m$ , let  $S_{t,i}$ , respectively  $S_{t,i}^+$ , denote the slab of thickness  $3r_t$  consisting of all locations in  $A$  lying at a perpendicular distance at most  $3r_t$  from the reduced face  $H_i \setminus W_t$ , respectively from  $H_i \setminus W_t^-$ .

We claim that  $S_{t,i}^+ \setminus S_{t,i} \subset W_t^+$ , for each  $i \in \{1, \dots, m\}$ . Indeed, given  $w \in S_{t,i}^+ \setminus S_{t,i}$ , let  $z$  be the nearest point in  $H_i$  to  $w$ . Then  $\|w - z\| \leq 3r_t$ . Also  $z \notin H_i \setminus W_t$ , so  $z \in W_t$ . Therefore for some  $j \leq \kappa$  we have  $\text{dist}(z, e_j) \leq (K + 1)r_t$ , so  $\text{dist}(w, e_j) \leq (K + 4)r_t$ , so  $w \in W_t^+$ , justifying the claim.

Suppose  $E_t^{(2)}$  occurs. Let  $x \in V_t(\mathcal{P}_t) \cap A \setminus A^{(3r_t)}$ . Choose  $i \in \{1, \dots, m\}$  and  $y \in H_i$  such that  $\|x - y\| = \text{dist}(x, H_i) \leq 3r_t$ . Then since  $x \notin W_t^+$ , for all  $j$  we have

$$\text{dist}(y, \partial H_j) \geq \text{dist}(x, \partial H_j) - 3r_t > (K + 1)r_t,$$

so  $y \in H_i \setminus W_t$  and  $x \in S_{t,i}$ . Thus  $V_t(\mathcal{P}_t)$  intersects the slab  $S_{t,i}$ . However, it does not intersect the face  $H_i$ , and nor does it intersect the set  $S_{t,i}^+ \setminus S_{t,i}$ , (since by the earlier claim this set is contained in  $W_t^+$  which is fully covered). Hence by the union bound

$$\mathbb{P}[E_t^{(2)}] \leq \sum_{i=1}^m \mathbb{P}[F_t((H_i \setminus W_t^-) \cup (S_{t,i}^+ \setminus S_{t,i}), \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(S_{t,i}, \mathcal{P}_t)].$$

By (7.32) from Lemma 7.8, along with an obvious rotation, each term in the above sum tends to zero. This gives us the result.  $\square$

Next we estimate the probability that there is an uncovered region within distance  $Kr_t$  of a 1-dimensional edge of  $\partial A$  but not including any of that edge itself.

**Lemma 7.17** *It is the case that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(\cup_{i=1}^\kappa e_i \cup Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)] \rightarrow 0$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** Let  $i \in \{1, \dots, \kappa\}$ .

For  $t > 0$ , let  $W_{i,t}^*$  denote the set of locations in  $A$  at perpendicular distance at most  $(K + 4)r_t$  from the reduced edge  $e_i \setminus Q_t$ . We claim that

$$(e_i \oplus B(o, (K + 4)r_t)) \cap A \setminus Q_t^+ \subset W_{i,t}^*. \tag{7.44}$$

Indeed, suppose  $x \in (e_i \oplus B(o, (K + 4)r_t)) \cap A \setminus Q_t^+$ . Let  $y \in e_i$  with  $\|x - y\| = d(x, e_i)$ . Then  $\|x - y\| \leq (K + 4)r_t$ , and since  $x \notin Q_t^+$ , for all  $j \in \{1, \dots, \nu\}$

$$\begin{aligned} \text{dist}(y, q_j) &\geq \text{dist}(x, q_j) - (K + 4)r_t \\ &> [K(K + 9) - (K + 4)]r_t \geq K(K + 7)r_t. \end{aligned}$$

Therefore  $y \notin Q_t$ , so  $x \in W_{i,t}^*$ , demonstrating the claim. Hence

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[F_t(e_i \cup Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t((e_i \oplus B(o, (K + 4)r_t)) \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)] \\ \leq \mathbb{P}[F_t(e_i, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(W_{i,t}^* \setminus Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)], \end{aligned}$$

and we claim that this probability tends to zero. Indeed, if  $x \in W_{i,t}^* \setminus Q_t^+$ , then taking  $x' \in e_i$  with  $\|x - x'\| = \text{dist}(x, e_i)$ , we have  $\text{dist}(x', \partial e_i) \geq \text{dist}(x, \partial e_i) - (K + 4)r_t \geq K(K + 7)r_t$ , and so by the choice of  $K$ , for any face  $\phi'$  of  $A$ , other than the two faces meeting at  $e_i$ , we have  $\text{dist}(x', \phi') > 3(K + 7)r_t$ , and hence  $\text{dist}(x, \phi') \geq (2K + 17)r_t$ . Then the claim follows by Lemma 7.12 and an obvious rotation. Since

$$F_t(\cup_{i=1}^{\kappa} e_i \cup Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t) \subset \cup_{i=1}^{\kappa} [F_t(e_i \cup Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t((e_i \oplus B(o, (K + 4)r_t)) \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)],$$

the result follows by the union bound. □

**Proof of Theorem 3.3** First we estimate the probability of event  $F_t(A^{(3r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)^c$ , that there is an uncovered region in  $A$  distant more than  $3r_t$  from  $\partial A$ . We apply Lemma 7.3, with  $\mu_t = \mu$ ,  $W_t = A \setminus A^{(3r_t)}$ ,  $b = d$ ,  $a = f_0\theta_3$ , and  $c = 1/(f_0 \min(\pi, 2\alpha_1))$ . Then  $(b/d) - ac = 1 - (4\pi/(3 \min(\pi, 2\alpha_1))) < 0$ , so by Lemma 7.3,

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(3r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)]) = 1. \tag{7.45}$$

Let  $\partial^* A := ((\partial A) \setminus W_t^+) \cup \cup_{i=1}^{\kappa} e_i \setminus Q_t$  (note that the definition depends on  $t$  but we omit this from the notation). This is the union of reduced faces and reduced edges of  $\partial A$ .

We have the event inclusion  $F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t) \subset F_t(\partial^* A, \mathcal{P}_t)$ , and by the union bound

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[F_t(\partial^* A, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)] &\leq \mathbb{P}[F_t(Q_t^+)^c] + \mathbb{P}[F_t(\cup_{i=1}^{\kappa} e_i \cup Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)] \\ &\quad + \mathbb{P}[F_t(\partial A \cup W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A \setminus A^{(3r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)] + \mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(3r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)^c], \end{aligned}$$

and the four probabilities on the right tend to zero by Lemma 7.13, Lemma 7.17, Lemma 7.16 and (7.45) respectively. Therefore

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)] = \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(\partial^* A, \mathcal{P}_t)], \tag{7.46}$$

provided the limit on the right exists.

Next we claim that the events  $F_t(e_i \setminus Q_t, \mathcal{P}_t)$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq \kappa$ , are mutually independent. Indeed, for distinct  $i, j \in \{1, \dots, \kappa\}$ , if  $x \in e_i \setminus Q_t$  then  $\text{dist}(x, \partial e_i) \geq K(K + 7)r_t$  by (7.41), so by our choice of  $K$ ,  $\text{dist}(x, e_j) \geq 3r_t$  for  $t$  sufficiently large. Therefore the  $r_t$ -neighbourhoods of  $e_1 \setminus Q_t, \dots, e_{\kappa} \setminus Q_t$  are disjoint, and the independence follows. Hence by Lemma 7.14,

$$\begin{aligned} &\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t(\cup_{i=1}^{\kappa} e_i \setminus Q_t, \mathcal{P}_t)]) \\ &= \begin{cases} \exp\left(-\sum_{\{i:\alpha_i=\alpha_1\}} (|e_i|/(k-1)!)(\alpha_1/32)^{1/3} 3^{1-k} e^{-\beta/3}\right) & \text{if } \alpha_1 \leq \pi/2 \\ 1 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \end{aligned} \tag{7.47}$$

Observe next that by the definition of  $W_t^+$  at (7.42), the set  $\partial A \setminus W_t^+$  is at Euclidean distance at least  $Kr_t$  from all of the edges  $e_i$ . Therefore the events  $F_t(\cup_{i=1}^k e_i \setminus Q_t, \mathcal{P}_t)$  and  $F_t(\partial A \setminus W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)$  are independent. Therefore using (7.46) we have

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)] = \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(\cup_{i=1}^k e_i \setminus Q_t, \mathcal{P}_t)] \times \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(\partial A \setminus W_t^+, \mathcal{P}_t)],$$

provided the two limits on the right exist. But we know from (7.47) and Lemma 7.15 that these two limits do indeed exist, and what their values are. Substituting these two values, we obtain the result stated for  $R'_{t,k}$  in (3.5). Then we obtain the result stated for  $R_{n,k}$  in (3.5) by applying Lemma 7.1. □

### 7.5 Proof of Theorem 3.1: first steps

In this subsection we assume that  $d \geq 2$  and  $A$  has  $C^2$  boundary. Let  $\zeta \in \mathbb{R}$ , and assume that  $(r_t)_{t>0}$  satisfies (7.15). Let  $k \in \mathbb{N}$ . Given any point process  $\mathcal{X}$  in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ , and any  $t > 0$ , define the ‘vacant’ region  $V_t(\mathcal{X})$  by (7.13), and given also  $D \subset \mathbb{R}^d$ , define  $F_t(D, \mathcal{X})$ , the event that  $D$  is ‘fully covered’  $k$  times, by (7.14).

Given  $x \in \partial A$  we can express  $\partial A$  locally in a neighbourhood of  $x$ , after a rotation, as the graph of a  $C^2$  function with zero derivative at  $x$ . As outlined in earlier in Sect. 5, we shall approximate to that function by the graph of a piecewise affine function (in  $d = 2$ , a piecewise linear function).

For each  $x \in \partial A$ , we can find an open neighbourhood  $\mathcal{N}_x$  of  $x$ , a number  $r(x) > 0$  such that  $B(x, 3r(x)) \subset \mathcal{N}_x$  and a rotation  $\rho_x$  about  $x$  such that  $\rho_x(\partial A \cap \mathcal{N}_x)$  is the graph of a real-valued  $C^2$  function  $f$  defined on an open ball  $D \subset \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ , with  $\langle f'(u), e \rangle \leq 1/9$  for all  $u \in D$  and all unit vectors  $e$  in  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ , where  $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$  denotes the Euclidean inner product in  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  and  $f'(u) := (\partial_1 f(u), \partial_2 f(u), \dots, \partial_{d-1} f(u))$  is the derivative of  $f$  at  $u$ . Moreover, by taking a smaller neighbourhood if necessary, we can also assume that there exists  $\varepsilon > 0$  and  $a \in \mathbb{R}$  such that  $f(u) \in [a + \varepsilon, a + 2\varepsilon]$  for all  $u \in D$  and also  $\rho_x(A) \cap (D \times [a, a + 3\varepsilon]) = \{(u, z) : u \in D, a \leq z \leq f(u)\}$ .

By a compactness argument, we can and do take a finite collection of points  $x_1, \dots, x_J \in \partial A$  such that

$$\partial A \subset \cup_{j=1}^J B(x_j, r(x_j)). \tag{7.48}$$

Then there are constants  $\varepsilon_j > 0$ , and rigid motions  $\rho_j, 1 \leq j \leq J$ , such that for each  $j$  the set  $\rho_j(\partial A \cap \mathcal{N}_{x_j})$  is the graph of a  $C^2$  function  $f_j$  defined on a ball  $I_j$  in  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ , with  $\langle f'_j(u), e \rangle \leq 1/9$  for all  $u \in I_j$  and all unit vectors  $e \in \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ , and also with  $\varepsilon_j \leq f_j(u) \leq 2\varepsilon_j$  for all  $u \in I_j$  and  $\rho_j(A) \cap (I_j \times [0, 3\varepsilon_j]) = \{(u, z) : u \in I_j, 0 \leq z \leq f(u)\}$ .

Let  $\Gamma \subset \partial A$  be a closed set such that  $\Gamma \subset B(x_j, r(x_j))$  for some  $j \in \{1, \dots, J\}$ , and such that  $\kappa(\partial\Gamma, r) = O(r^{2-d})$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ , where in this section we set  $\partial\Gamma := \Gamma \cap \overline{\partial A \setminus \Gamma}$ , the boundary of  $\Gamma$  relative to  $\partial A$  (the  $\kappa$  notation was given at (6.2)). To simplify notation we shall assume that  $\Gamma \subset B(x_1, r(x_1))$ , and moreover that  $\rho_1$  is the identity map. Then  $\Gamma = \{(u, f_1(u)) : u \in U\}$  for some bounded set  $U \subset \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ . Also,

writing  $\phi(\cdot)$  for  $f_1(\cdot)$  from now on, we assume

$$\phi(U) \subset [\varepsilon_1, 2\varepsilon_1] \tag{7.49}$$

and

$$A \cap (U \times [0, 3\varepsilon_1]) = \{(u, z) : u \in U, 0 \leq z \leq \phi(u)\}. \tag{7.50}$$

Note that for any  $u, v \in U$ , by the mean value theorem we have for some  $w \in [u, v]$  that

$$|\phi(v) - \phi(u)| = |\langle v - u, \phi'(w) \rangle| \leq (1/9)\|v - u\|. \tag{7.51}$$

Choose (and keep fixed for the rest of this paper) constants  $\gamma_0, \gamma, \gamma'$  with

$$1/(2d) < \gamma_0 < \gamma < \gamma' < 1/d. \tag{7.52}$$

The use of these will be for  $t^{-\gamma}, t^{-\gamma'}$  and  $t^{-\gamma_0}$  to provide length scales that are different from each other and from that of  $r_t$ .

When  $d = 2$ , we approximate to  $\Gamma$  by a polygonal line  $\Gamma_t$  with edge-lengths that are  $\Theta(t^{-\gamma})$ . When  $d = 3$ , we approximate to  $\Gamma$  by a polyhedral surface  $\Gamma_t$  with all of its vertices in  $\partial A$ , and face diameters that are  $\Theta(t^{-\gamma})$ , taking all the faces of  $\Gamma_t$  to be triangles. For general  $d$ , we wish to approximate to  $\Gamma$  by a set  $\Gamma_t$  given by a union of the  $(d - 1)$ -faces in a certain simplicial complex of dimension  $d - 1$  embedded in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ .

To do this, divide  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  into cubes of dimension  $d - 1$  and side  $t^{-\gamma}$ , and divide each of these cubes into  $(d - 1)!$  simplices (we take these simplices to be closed). Let  $U_t$  be the union of all those simplices in the resulting tessellation of  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  into simplices, that are contained within  $U$ , and let  $U_t^-$  be the union of those simplices in the tessellation which are contained within  $U(3dt^{-\gamma})$ , where for  $r > 0$  we set  $U^{(r)}$  to be the set of  $x \in U$  at a Euclidean distance more than  $r$  from  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1} \setminus U$ . If  $d = 2$ , the simplices are just intervals. See Fig. 3.

Let  $\sigma^-(t)$ , respectively  $\sigma(t)$ , denote the number of simplices making up  $U_t^-$ , respectively  $U_t$ . Choose  $t_0 > 0$  such that  $\sigma^-(t) > 0$  for all  $t \geq t_0$ .

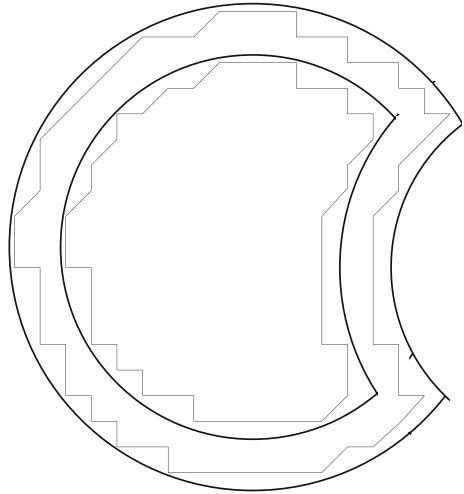
Let  $\psi_t : U_t \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  be the function that is affine on each of the simplices making up  $U_t$ , and agrees with the function  $\phi$  on each of the vertices of these simplices. Our approximating surface (or polygonal line if  $d = 2$ ) will be defined by  $\Gamma_t := \{(x, \psi_t(x) - Kt^{-2\gamma}) : x \in U_t^-\}$ , with the constant  $K$  given by the following lemma. This lemma uses Taylor expansion to show that  $\psi_t$  a good approximation to  $\phi$ .

**Lemma 7.18** (Polytopal approximation of  $\partial A$ ) *Set  $K := \sup_{t \geq t_0, u \in U_t} (t^{2\gamma} |\phi(u) - \psi_t(u)|)$ . Then  $K < \infty$ .*

**Proof** Set  $K_0 := d^3 \sup\{|\phi''_{\ell m}(v)|, \ell, m \in \{1, \dots, d - 1\}, v \in U\}$ , i.e.  $d^3$  times the supremum over all  $v \in U$  of the max-norm of the Hessian of  $\phi$  at  $v$ . Then  $K_0 < \infty$ .

Given  $t \geq t_0$ , denote the simplices making up  $U_t$  by  $T_{t,1}, \dots, T_{t,\sigma(t)}$ . Let  $i \in \{1, \dots, \sigma(t)\}$ . Let  $u_0, u_1, \dots, u_{d-1} \in \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  be the vertices of  $T_{t,i}$ .

**Fig. 3** Example in  $d = 3$ . The outer crescent-shaped region is  $U$ , while the inner crescent is  $U^{(3dt^{-\gamma})}$  (the annular region is not to scale: its thickness should be 9 times the length of the shortest edges of the polygons). The outer polygon is  $U_t$ , while the inner polygon is  $U_t^-$



Let  $u \in T_{t,i}$ . Then  $u$  is a convex combination of  $u_0, \dots, u_{d-1}$ ; write  $u = u_0 + \sum_{j=1}^{d-1} \alpha_j(u_j - u_0)$  with  $\alpha_j \geq 0$  for each  $j$  and  $\sum_{j=1}^{d-1} \alpha_j \leq 1$ . Set  $v_0 = u_0$ , and for  $1 \leq k \leq d - 1$ , set  $v_k := u_0 + \sum_{j=1}^k \alpha_j(u_j - u_0)$ . Then by the mean value theorem, for  $1 \leq k \leq d - 1$ , there exists  $w_k \in T_{t,i}$  (in fact,  $w_k \in [v_{k-1}, v_k]$ ), such that

$$\phi(v_k) - \phi(v_{k-1}) = \langle v_k - v_{k-1}, \phi'(w_k) \rangle = \alpha_k \langle u_k - u_0, \phi'(w_k) \rangle.$$

Also, since  $\psi_t$  is affine on  $T_{t,i}$  and agrees with  $\phi$  on  $u_0, u_1, \dots, u_{d-1}$ , there exists  $\tilde{w}_k \in T_{t,i}$  (in fact,  $\tilde{w}_k \in [u_0, u_k]$ ) such that

$$\begin{aligned} \psi_t(v_k) - \psi_t(v_{k-1}) &= \alpha_k(\psi_t(u_k) - \psi_t(u_0)) \\ &= \alpha_k(\phi(u_k) - \phi(u_0)) = \alpha_k \langle u_k - u_0, \phi'(\tilde{w}_k) \rangle. \end{aligned}$$

Hence,

$$\phi(v_k) - \phi(v_{k-1}) - (\psi_t(v_k) - \psi_t(v_{k-1})) = \alpha_k \langle u_k - u_0, \phi'(w_k) - \phi'(\tilde{w}_k) \rangle.$$

By the mean value theorem again, each component of  $\phi'(w_k) - \phi'(\tilde{w}_k)$  is bounded by  $K_0 d^{-2} \|\tilde{w}_k - w_k\|$ . Therefore  $\|\phi'(w_k) - \phi'(\tilde{w}_k)\| \leq K_0 d^{-1} \|\tilde{w}_k - w_k\|$ . Since  $\text{diam}(T_{t,i}) = (d - 1)^{1/2} t^{-\gamma}$ , and since  $u = v_{d-1}$  and  $\phi(u_0) = \psi_t(u_0)$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} |\phi(u) - \psi_t(u)| &= \left| \sum_{k=1}^{d-1} [\phi(v_k) - \phi(v_{k-1}) - (\psi_t(v_k) - \psi_t(v_{k-1}))] \right| \\ &\leq \sum_{k=1}^{d-1} \alpha_k \|u_k - u_0\| K_0 d^{-1} \|\tilde{w}_k - w_k\| \\ &\leq \text{diam}(T_{t,i})^2 K_0 d^{-1} \leq K_0 t^{-2\gamma}, \end{aligned}$$

and therefore  $K \leq K_0 < \infty$ , as required. □

We now subtract a constant from  $\psi_t$  to obtain a piecewise affine function  $\phi_t$  that approximates  $\phi$  from below. For  $t \geq t_0$  and  $u \in U_t$ , define  $\phi_t(u) := \psi_t(u) - Kt^{-2\gamma}$ , with  $K$  given by Lemma 7.18. Then for all  $t \geq t_0, u \in U_t$  we have  $|\psi_t(u) - \phi(u)| \leq Kt^{-2\gamma}$  so that

$$\phi_t(u) \leq \phi(u) \leq \phi_t(u) + 2Kt^{-2\gamma}. \tag{7.53}$$

Define the set  $\Gamma_t := \{(u, \phi_t(u)) : u \in U_t^-\}$ . We refer to each  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional face of  $\Gamma_t$  (given by the graph of  $\phi_t$  restricted to one of the simplices in our triangulation of  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ ) as simply a *face* of  $\Gamma_t$ . Denote these faces of  $\Gamma_t$  by  $H_{t,1}, \dots, H_{t,\sigma^-(t)}$ . The number of faces,  $\sigma^-(t)$ , is  $\Theta(t^{(d-1)\gamma})$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . The perimeter (i.e., the  $(d - 2)$ -dimensional Hausdorff measure of the boundary) of each individual face is  $\Theta(t^{-(d-2)\gamma})$ .

For  $t \geq t_0$ , define subsets  $A_t, A_t^-, \tilde{A}_t, A_t^*, A_t^{**}$  of  $\mathbb{R}^d$  and Poisson processes  $\mathcal{P}'_t$  and  $\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t$  in  $\mathbb{R}^d$  by

$$\begin{aligned} A_t &:= \{(u, z) : u \in U_t, 0 \leq z \leq \phi(u)\}, & \tilde{A}_t &:= \{(u, z) : u \in U_t, 0 \leq z \leq \phi_t(u)\}, \\ A_t^- &:= \{(u, z) : u \in U_t^-, 0 \leq z \leq \phi(u)\}, \\ A_t^* &:= \{(u, z) : u \in U_t^-, \phi_t(u) - (3/2)r_t \leq z \leq \phi(u)\}, \\ A_t^{**} &:= \{(u, z) : u \in U_t^-, \phi_t(u) - (3/2)r_t \leq z \leq \phi_t(u)\}, \\ \mathcal{P}'_t &:= \mathcal{P}_t \cap A_t, & \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t &:= \mathcal{P}_t \cap \tilde{A}_t. \end{aligned} \tag{7.54}$$

Thus  $A_t$  is a ‘thick slice’ of  $A$  near the boundary region  $\Gamma$ ,  $\tilde{A}_t$  is an approximating region having  $\Gamma_t$  as its upper boundary, and  $A_t^*, A_t^{**}$  are ‘thin slices’ of  $A$  also having  $\Gamma$ , respectively  $\Gamma_t$ , as upper boundary. By (7.53), (7.49) and (7.50),  $A_t^{**} \subset A_t^* \subset A_t^- \subset A_t \subset A$ , and  $A_t^{**} \subset \tilde{A}_t \subset A_t$ . The rest of this subsection, and the next subsection, are devoted to proving the following intermediate step towards a proof of Theorem 3.1.

**Proposition 7.19** (Limiting coverage probability for approximating polytopal surface)  
*It is the case that  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)] = \exp(-c_{d,k}|\Gamma|e^{-\zeta})$ , where  $|\Gamma|$  denotes the  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional Hausdorff measure of  $\Gamma$ .*

The following corollary of Lemma 7.18 is a first step towards proving this.

**Lemma 7.20** (a) *It is the case that  $|A_t \setminus \tilde{A}_t| = O(t^{-2\gamma})$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

(b) *Let  $K$  be as given in Lemma 7.18. Then for all  $t \geq t_0$  and  $x \in U_t^{(r_t)} \times \mathbb{R}$ ,  $|B(x, r_t) \cap A_t \setminus \tilde{A}_t| \leq 2K\theta_{d-1}r_t^{d-1}t^{-2\gamma}$ .*

**Proof** Since  $|A_t \setminus \tilde{A}_t| = \int_{U_t} (\phi(u) - \phi_t(u))du$ , where this is a  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional Lebesgue integral, part (a) comes from (7.53).

For (b), let  $x \in U_t^{(r_t)} \times \mathbb{R}$ , and let  $u \in U_t^{(r_t)}$  be the projection of  $x$  onto the first  $d - 1$  coordinates. Then if  $y \in B(x, r_t) \cap A_t \setminus \tilde{A}_t$ , we have  $y = (v, s)$  with  $\|v - u\| \leq r_t$  and

$\phi_t(v) < s \leq \phi(v)$ . Therefore using (7.53) yields

$$|B(x, r_t) \cap A_t \setminus \tilde{A}_t| \leq \int_{B_{(d-1)}(u, r_t)} (\phi(v) - \phi_t(v)) dv \leq 2K\theta_{d-1}t^{-2\gamma}r_t^{d-1},$$

where the integral is a  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional Lebesgue integral. This gives part (b).  $\square$

The next lemma says that small balls centred in  $A$ , or very near to  $A$ , have almost half of their volume in  $A$ .

**Lemma 7.21** *Let  $\varepsilon > 0$ . Then for all large enough  $t$ , all  $x \in A_t^*$ , and all  $s \in [r_t/2, r_t]$ , we have  $|B(x, s) \cap \tilde{A}_t| > (1 - \varepsilon)(\theta_d/2)s^d$ .*

**Proof** For all large enough  $t$ , all  $x \in A_t^*$  and  $s \in [r_t/2, r_t]$ , we have  $B(x, s) \cap A \subset A_t$ , so  $B(x, s) \cap A_t = B(x, s) \cap A$ , and hence by Lemma 6.9 and Lemma 7.20(b),

$$\begin{aligned} |B(x, s) \cap \tilde{A}_t| &= |B(x, s) \cap A_t| - |B(x, s) \cap A_t \setminus \tilde{A}_t| \\ &\geq (1 - \varepsilon/2)(\theta_d/2)s^d - O(r_t^{d-1}t^{-2\gamma}). \end{aligned}$$

Since  $t^{-2\gamma} = o(r_t)$ , this gives us the result.  $\square$

Recall that  $\mathbb{H}$  and  $\mathcal{U}_t$  were defined just before Lemma 7.4. The next lemma provides a bound on the probability that a region of diameter  $O(r_t)$  within  $A$  or  $A_t^*$  is not fully covered. The bound is relatively crude, but very useful for dealing with ‘exceptional’ regions such as those near the boundaries of faces in the polytopal approximation.

**Lemma 7.22** *Let  $\delta \in (0, 1)$ ,  $K_1 > 0$ . Then as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ ,*

$$\sup_{z \in \mathbb{R}^d} \mathbb{P}[F_t(B(z, K_1r_t) \cap A_t^*, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)^c] = O(t^{\delta-(d-1)/d}), \tag{7.55}$$

$$\sup_{z \in \mathbb{R}^d} \mathbb{P}[F_t(B(z, K_1r_t) \cap \mathbb{H}, \mathcal{U}_t)^c] = O(t^{\delta-(d-1)/d}), \tag{7.56}$$

and

$$\sup_{z \in \mathbb{R}^d} \mathbb{P}[F_t(B(z, K_1r_t) \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)^c] = O(t^{\delta-(d-1)/d}). \tag{7.57}$$

**Proof** For (7.55), it suffices to prove, for any  $(z_t)_{t>0}$  with  $z_t \in \mathbb{R}^d$  for each  $t$ , that

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(B(z_t, K_1r_t) \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)^c] = O(t^{\delta-(d-1)/d}) \quad \text{as } t \rightarrow \infty. \tag{7.58}$$

To see this, we apply Lemma 7.3, taking  $\mu_t = f_0|\cdot \cap \tilde{A}_t|$ , taking  $W_t = B(z_t, K_1r_t) \cap A_t^*$ , with  $c = 2(d - 1)/(d\theta_d f_0)$  (using (7.15)),  $b = 0$ , and  $a = (\theta_d f_0/2)(1 - \delta)$  (using Lemma 7.21). Then  $(b/d) - ac = -(1 - \delta)(d - 1)/d$ . Application of Lemma 7.3, taking  $\varepsilon = \delta/d$ , shows that (7.58) holds, and hence (7.55).

The proofs of (7.56) and (7.57) are similar; for (7.57) we have to use (6.9) directly, rather than using Lemma 7.21. We omit the details.  $\square$

Let  $\partial_{d-2}\Gamma_t := \cup_{i=1}^{\sigma^-(t)} \partial_{d-2}H_{t,i}$ , the union of all  $(d - 2)$ -dimensional faces in the boundaries of the faces making up  $\Gamma_t$  (the  $H_{t,i}$  were defined just after (7.53)). Recall from (7.52) that  $\gamma' \in (\gamma, 1/d)$ . For each  $t > 0$  define the sets  $Q_t, Q_t^+ \subset \mathbb{R}^d$  by

$$Q_t := (\partial_{d-2}\Gamma_t \oplus B(o, 7r_t)); \quad Q_t^+ := (\partial_{d-2}\Gamma_t \oplus B(o, 8dt^{-\gamma'})) \cap A_t^*. \tag{7.59}$$

Thus  $Q_t^+$  is a region near the corners of our polygon approximating  $\partial A$  (if  $d = 2$ ) or near the boundaries of the faces of our polytopal surface approximating  $\partial A$  (if  $d \geq 3$ ). In the next lemma we show that  $Q_t^+$  is fully covered with high probability.

**Lemma 7.23** *It is the case that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(Q_t^+, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)] \rightarrow 1$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** Let  $\varepsilon \in (0, \gamma' - \gamma)$ . For each face  $H_{t,i}$  of  $\Gamma_t$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq \sigma^-(t)$ , we claim that we can take  $x_{i,1}, \dots, x_{i,k_{t,i}} \in H_{t,i}$  with  $\max_{1 \leq j \leq k_{t,i}} k_{t,i} = O(t^{-\gamma'} t^{-(d-2)\gamma} / r_t^{d-1})$ , such that

$$((\partial_{d-2}H_{t,i}) \oplus B(o, 9dt^{-\gamma'})) \cap H_{t,i} \subset \cup_{j=1}^{k_{t,i}} B(x_{i,j}, r_t). \tag{7.60}$$

Indeed, we can cover  $\partial_{d-2}H_{t,i}$  by  $O(t^{(d-2)(\gamma'-\gamma)})$  balls of radius  $t^{-\gamma'}$ , denoted  $B_{i,\ell}^{(0)}$  say. Replace each ball  $B_{i,\ell}^{(0)}$  with a ball  $B'_{i,\ell}$  with the same centre as  $B_{i,\ell}^{(0)}$  and with radius  $10dt^{-\gamma'}$ . Then cover  $B'_{i,\ell} \cap H_{t,i}$  by  $O((t^{-\gamma'} / r_t)^{d-1})$  balls of radius  $r_t$ . Every point in the set on the left side of (7.60) lies in one of these balls of radius  $r_t$ , and the claim follows.

Given  $x \in Q_t^+$ , write  $x = (u, h)$  with  $u \in U_t^-, h \in \mathbb{R}$ , and set  $y := (u, \phi_t(u))$ . Then  $\|y - x\| \leq 2r_t$  and there exists  $i$  with  $y \in H_{t,i}$ . Take such an  $i$ . Then  $\text{dist}(y, \partial_{d-2}H_{t,i}) = \text{dist}(y, \partial_{d-2}\Gamma_t) \leq 9dt^{-\gamma'}$ , so  $\|y - x_{i,j}\| \leq r_t$  for some  $j \leq k_{t,i}$  by (7.60). Therefore  $Q_t^+ \subset \cup_{i=1}^{\sigma^-(t)} \cup_{j=1}^{k_{t,i}} B(x_{i,j}, 3r_t)$ , so by the union bound,

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(Q_t^+, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)^c] \leq \sum_{i=1}^{\sigma^-(t)} \sum_{j=1}^{k_{t,i}} \mathbb{P}[F_t(B(x_{i,j}, 3r_t) \cap A_t^*, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)^c].$$

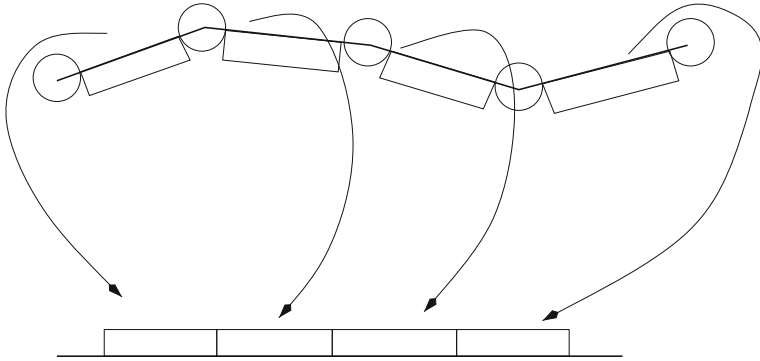
By Lemma 7.22 and the fact that  $\sigma^-(t) = O(t^{(d-1)\gamma})$ , the estimate in the last display is  $O(t^{\gamma-\gamma'} r_t^{1-d} t^{\varepsilon-(d-1)/d}) = O(t^{\varepsilon+\gamma-\gamma'})$ , which tends to zero. □

### 7.6 Induced coverage process and proof of Proposition 7.19

We shall conclude the proof of Proposition 7.19 by means of a device we refer to as the *induced coverage process*. This is obtained by taking the parts of  $\tilde{A}_t$  near the flat parts of  $\Gamma_t$ , along with any Poisson points therein, and rearranging them into a flat region of macroscopic size. The definition of this is somewhat simpler for  $d = 2$ , so for presentational purposes, we shall consider this case first.

Suppose that  $d = 2$ . The closure of the set  $\Gamma_t \setminus Q_t$  is a union of closed line segments ('intervals') with total length  $|\Gamma_t| - 14r_t\sigma^-(t)$ , which tends to  $|\Gamma|$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  because





**Fig. 4** The induced coverage process in 2 dimensions. The upper thick line is part of the set  $I_t$ , while the lower thick line is part of the line  $L_t$ . We show four of the blocks  $S_{t,i}$  next to the upper thick line, and four of the blocks making up  $S_t$  next to the lower thick line. The arrows represent the rigid motions  $\rho_{t,i}$ . The disks shown are part of  $Q_t$

$\sigma^-(t) = O(t^\gamma)$  and  $\gamma < 1/2$ . Denote these intervals by  $I_{t,1}, \dots, I_{t,\sigma^-(t)}$ , taking  $I_{t,i}$  to be a sub-interval of  $H_{t,i}$  for  $1 \leq i \leq \sigma^-(t)$ .

For  $1 \leq i \leq \sigma^-(t)$  define the closed rectangular strip (which we call a ‘block’)  $S_{t,i}$  (respectively  $S_{t,i}^+$ ) of dimensions  $|I_{t,i}| \times 2r_t$  (resp.  $|I_{t,i}| \times 4r_t$ ) to consist of those locations inside  $A_t$  lying within perpendicular distance at most  $2r_t$  (resp., at most  $4r_t$ ) of  $I_{t,i}$ . That is,

$$S_{t,i} := I_{t,i} \oplus [0, 2r_t e_{t,i}], \quad S_{t,i}^+ := I_{t,i} \oplus [0, 4r_t e_{t,i}],$$

where  $e_{t,i}$  is a unit vector perpendicular to  $I_{t,i}$  pointing inwards into  $\tilde{A}_t$  from  $I_{t,i}$ . Define the long interval  $D_t := [0, |\partial A_t| - 14r_t \sigma^-(t)]$ , and the long horizontal rectangular strips

$$S_t := D_t \times [0, 2r_t]; \quad S_t^+ := D_t \times [0, 4r_t].$$

Denote the lower boundary of  $S_t$  (that is, the set  $D_t \times \{0\}$ ) by  $L_t$ .

We shall verify in Lemma 7.25 that  $S_{t,1}^+, \dots, S_{t,\sigma^-(t)}^+$  are disjoint. Now choose rigid motions  $\rho_{t,i}$  of the plane,  $1 \leq i \leq \sigma^-(t)$ , such that after applications of these rigid motions the blocks  $S_{t,i}$  are lined up end to end to form the strip  $S_t$ , with the long edge  $I_{t,i}$  of the block transported to part of the lower boundary  $L_t$  of  $S_t$ . In other words, choose the rigid motions so that the sets  $\rho_{t,i}(S_{t,i})$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq \sigma^-(t)$ , have pairwise disjoint interiors and their union is  $S_t$ , and also  $\rho_{t,i}(I_{t,i}) \subset L_t$  for  $1 \leq i \leq \sigma^-(t)$  (see Fig. 4). This also implies that  $\cup_{i=1}^{\sigma^-(t)} \rho_{t,i}(S_{t,i}^+) = S_t^+$ .

By the restriction, mapping and superposition theorems for Poisson processes (see e.g. [19]), the point process  $\mathcal{P}_t'' := \cup_{i=1}^{\sigma^-(t)} \rho_{t,i}(\mathcal{P}' \cap S_{t,i}^+)$  is a homogeneous Poisson process of intensity  $tf_0$  in the long strip  $S_t^+$ .

Now suppose  $d \geq 3$ . To describe the induced coverage process in this case, we first define a ‘tartan’ (plaid) region  $T_t$  as follows. Recall that  $\gamma' \in (\gamma, 1/d)$ . Partition

each face  $H_{t,i}$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq \sigma^-(t)$  into a collection of  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes of side  $t^{-\gamma'}$  contained in  $H_{t,i}$ , together with a boundary region contained within  $\partial_{d-2}H_{t,i} \oplus B(o, dt^{-\gamma'})$ . Let  $T_t$  be the union (over all faces) of the boundaries of the  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes in this partition (see Fig. 5). Set  $T_t^+ := [T_t \oplus B(o, 11r_t)] \cap A_t^{**}$ .

Enumerate the  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes in the above subdivision of the faces  $H_{t,i}$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq \sigma^-(t)$ , as  $I_{t,1}^+, \dots, I_{t,\lambda(t)}^+$ . For  $1 \leq i \leq \lambda(t)$  let  $I_{t,i} := I_{t,i}^+ \setminus (T_t \oplus B(o, 7r_t))$ , which is a  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cube of side length  $t^{-\gamma'} - 14r_t$  with the same centre and orientation as  $I_{t,i}^+$ . We claim that the total  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional Lebesgue measure of these  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes satisfies

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (|\cup_{i=1}^{\lambda(t)} I_{t,i}|) = |G|. \tag{7.61}$$

Indeed, for  $1 \leq i \leq \lambda(t)$  we have  $|I_{t,i}|/|I_{t,i}^+| = ((t^{-\gamma'} - 14r_t)/t^{-\gamma'})^{d-1}$ , which tends to one since  $r_t = O(((\log t)/t)^{1/d})$  by (7.15), and  $\gamma' < 1/d$ , so the proportionate amount removed near the boundaries of the  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes  $I_{t,i}^+$  to give  $I_{t,i}$  vanishes. Also the ‘boundary part’ of a face  $H_{t,i}$  that is not contained in any of the of the  $I_{t,j}^+$ s has  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional Lebesgue measure that is  $O(t^{-(d-2)\gamma}t^{-\gamma'})$ , so that the total  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional measure of the removed regions near the boundaries of the faces is  $O(t^{(d-1)\gamma} \times t^{-(d-2)\gamma}t^{-\gamma'}) = O(t^{\gamma-\gamma'})$ , which tends to zero. Thus the claim (7.61) is justified.

For  $1 \leq i \leq \lambda(t)$  define closed, rectilinear (but not aligned with the axes),  $d$ -dimensional cuboids (which we call ‘blocks’)  $S_{t,i}$  (respectively  $S_{t,i}^+$ ), as follows. Let  $S_{t,i}$  (respectively  $S_{t,i}^+$ ) be the closure of the set of those locations  $x \in \tilde{A}_t$  such that  $\text{dist}(x, I_{t,i}) \leq 2r_t$  (resp.,  $\text{dist}(x, I_{t,i}) \leq 4r_t$ ) and such that there exists  $y \in I_{t,i}^o$  (the relative interior of  $I_{t,i}$ ) satisfying  $\|y - x\| = \text{dist}(x, I_{t,i})$ . For example, if  $d = 3$  then  $S_{t,i}$  (resp.  $S_{t,i}^+$ ) is a cuboid of dimensions  $(t^{-\gamma'} - 14r_t) \times (t^{-\gamma'} - 14r_t) \times 2r_t$  (resp.  $(t^{-\gamma'} - 14r_t) \times (t^{-\gamma'} - 14r_t) \times 4r_t$ ) with  $I_{t,i}$  as its base. We shall verify in Lemma 7.25 that  $S_{t,1}^+, \dots, S_{t,\sigma^-(t)}^+$  are disjoint.

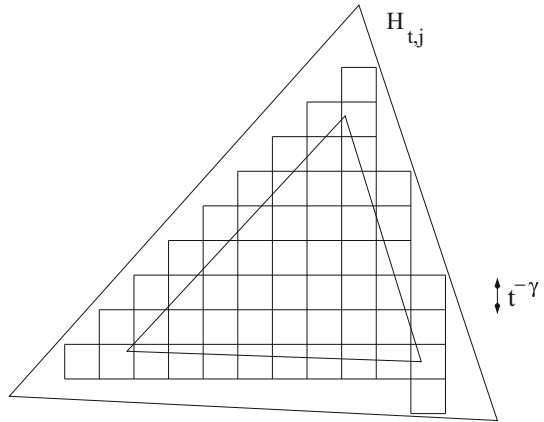
Define a region  $D_t \subset \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  that is approximately a rectilinear hypercube with lower left corner at the origin, and obtained as the union of  $\lambda(t)$  disjoint  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes of side  $t^{-\gamma'} - 14r_t$ . We can and do arrange that  $D_t \subset [0, |G_t|^{1/(d-1)} + t^{-\gamma}]^{d-1}$  for each  $t$ , and  $|D_t| \rightarrow |G|$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . Define the flat slabs

$$S_t := D_t \times [0, 2r_t]; \quad S_t^+ := D_t \times [0, 4r_t],$$

and denote the lower boundary of  $S_t$  (that is, the set  $D_t \times \{0\}$ ) by  $L_t$ .

Now choose rigid motions  $\rho_{t,i}$  of  $\mathbb{R}^d$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq \lambda(t)$ , such that under applications of these rigid motions the blocks  $S_{t,i}$  are reassembled to form the slab  $S_t$ , with the square face  $I_{t,i}$  of the  $i$ -th block transported to part of the lower boundary  $L_t$  of  $S_t$ . In other words, choose the rigid motions so that the sets  $\rho_{t,i}(S_{t,i})$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq \lambda(t)$ , have pairwise disjoint interiors and their union is  $S_t$ , and also  $\rho_{t,i}(I_{t,i}) \subset L_t$  for  $1 \leq i \leq \lambda(t)$ . This also implies that  $\cup_{i=1}^{\lambda(t)} \rho_{t,i}(S_{t,i}^+) = S_t^+$ .

**Fig. 5** Part of the ‘tartan’ region  $T_t$  when  $d = 3$ . The outer triangle represents one face  $H_{t,i}$ , and the part of  $T_t$  within  $H_{t,i}$  is given by the union of the boundaries of the squares. The triangle has sides of length  $\Theta(t^{-\gamma})$ , while the squares have sides of length  $t^{-\gamma'}$ . The region between the two triangles is part of  $Q_t^+$ . It has thickness  $8dt^{-\gamma'}$  (the constant  $8d$  is not drawn to scale), and covers the whole boundary region not covered by the squares



By the restriction, mapping and superposition theorems, the point process  $\mathcal{P}_t'' := \cup_{i=1}^{\lambda(t)} \rho_{t,i}(\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t \cap S_{t,i}^+)$  is a homogeneous Poisson process of intensity  $t$  in the flat slab  $S_t^+$ .

In both cases ( $d = 2$  or  $d \geq 3$ ), we extend  $\mathcal{P}_t''$  to a Poisson process  $\mathcal{U}_t'$  in  $\mathbb{H} := \mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times [0, \infty)$  as follows. Let  $\mathcal{P}_t'''$  be a Poisson process of intensity  $tf_0$  in  $\mathbb{H} \setminus S_t^+$ , independent of  $\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t$ , and set

$$\mathcal{U}_t' := \mathcal{P}_t'' \cup \mathcal{P}_t''' \tag{7.62}$$

Then  $\mathcal{U}_t'$  is a homogeneous Poisson process of intensity  $tf_0$  in  $\mathbb{H}$ . We call the collection of balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on the points of this point process the *induced coverage process*.

The next lemma says that in  $d \geq 3$ , the ‘tartan’ region  $T_t^+$  is covered with high probability. It is needed because locations in  $T_t^+$  lie near the boundary of blocks  $S_{t,i}$ , so that coverage of these locations by  $\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t$  does not necessarily correspond to coverage of their images in the induced coverage process.

**Lemma 7.24** *Suppose  $d \geq 3$ . Then  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(T_t^+, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)] = 1$ .*

**Proof** The total number of the  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes (in the whole of  $\Gamma_t$ ) in the partition described above is  $O(t^{(d-1)\gamma'})$ , and for each of these  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes the number of balls of radius  $r_t$  required to cover the boundary of the cube is  $O((t^{-\gamma'}r_t^{-1})^{d-2})$ . Thus we can take  $x_{t,1}, \dots, x_{t,k_t} \in \mathbb{R}^d$ , with  $k_t = O(t^{\gamma'}r_t^{2-d})$ , such that  $T_t \subset \cup_{i=1}^{k_t} B(x_{t,i}, r_t)$ .

Then  $T_t^+ \subset \cup_{i=1}^{k_t} B(x_{t,i}, 12r_t) \cap A_t^*$ . Let  $\varepsilon \in (0, (1/d) - \gamma')$ . By Lemma 7.22,

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[F_t(T_t^+, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)^c] &\leq \sum_{i=1}^{k_t} \mathbb{P}[F_t(B(x_{t,i}, 12r_t) \cap A_t^*, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)^c] \\ &= O(t^{\gamma'}r_t^{2-d}t^{\varepsilon-(d-1)/d}) = O(t^{\varepsilon+\gamma'-1/d}), \end{aligned}$$

which tends to zero. □

So as to be able to treat the cases  $d = 2$  and  $d \geq 3$  together, for  $d = 2$  we define  $\lambda(t) := \sigma^-(t)$  and  $T_t^+ := T_t := \emptyset$  (these were previously defined only for  $d = 3$ ). We verify next that the blocks  $S_{t,i}^+, 1 \leq i \leq \lambda(t)$ , are pairwise disjoint. This is needed to ensure that the Poisson processes  $\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t \cap S_{t,i}^+, 1 \leq i \leq \lambda(t)$ , are mutually independent.

**Lemma 7.25** *Suppose  $d \geq 2, t \geq t_0$  and  $i, j \in \{1, 2, \dots, \lambda(t)\}$  with  $i < j$ . Then  $S_i^+ \cap S_j^+ = \emptyset$ .*

**Proof** Suppose  $S_i^+ \cap S_j^+ \neq \emptyset$ ; we shall obtain a contradiction. Let  $x \in S_i^+ \cap S_j^+$ . Let  $y$  be the closest point in  $I_{t,i}$  to  $x$ , and  $y'$  the closest point in  $I_{t,j}$  to  $x$ . Choose  $k, \ell$  such that  $I_{t,i} \subset H_{t,k}$  and  $I_{t,j} \subset H_{t,\ell}$ . Then  $k \neq \ell$  since if  $d = 2$  we have  $k = i$  and  $\ell = j$ , while if  $d \geq 3$ , if  $k = \ell$  then clearly we would have  $S_i^+ \cap S_j^+ = \emptyset$ .

Let  $J_{t,k}$  be the projection of  $H_{t,k}$  onto  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ , and write  $y = (u, \phi_t(u))$  with  $u \in J_{t,k}$ . Let  $v \in \partial J_{t,k}$ . By (7.51) and (7.53),

$$|\phi_t(v) - \phi_t(u)| \leq |\phi(v) - \phi(u)| + 4Kt^{-2\gamma} \leq (1/9)\|v - u\| + 4Kt^{-2\gamma}.$$

Since  $y \in I_{t,i}$  we have  $\|y - (v, \phi_t(v))\| \geq \text{dist}(y, \partial H_{t,k}) \geq 7r_t$ , so that

$$7r_t \leq \|u - v\| + |\phi_t(u) - \phi_t(v)| \leq (10/9)\|u - v\| + 4Kt^{-2\gamma},$$

and hence  $\|u - v\| \geq (63/10)r_t - 4Kt^{-2\gamma}$ , and hence provided  $t$  is large enough,  $\text{dist}(u, \partial J_{t,k}) \geq 6r_t$ . Similarly, writing  $y' := (u', \phi_t(u'))$  we have  $\text{dist}(u', \partial J_{t,\ell}) \geq 6r_t$ . Therefore

$$\|y - y'\| \geq \|u - u'\| \geq 12r_t.$$

However, also  $\|y - y'\| \leq \|y - x\| + \|y' - x\| \leq 8r_t$ , and we have our contradiction. □

Denote the union of the boundaries (relative to  $\mathbb{R}^{d-1} \times \{0\}$ ) of the lower faces of the blocks making up the strip/slab  $S_t$ , by  $C_t^0$ , and the  $(9r_t)$ -neighbourhood of this region by  $C_t$  (the  $C$  can be viewed as standing for ‘corner region’, at least when  $d = 2$ ), i.e.

$$C_t^0 := \cup_{i=1}^{\lambda(t)} \rho_{t,i}(\partial I_{t,i}), \quad C_t := (C_t^0 \oplus B(o, 9r_t)) \cap \mathbb{H}. \tag{7.63}$$

Here  $\partial I_{t,i}$  denotes the relative boundary of  $I_{t,i}$ .

The next lemma says that the corner region  $C_t$  is covered with high probability. It is needed because locations in  $Q_t^+$  lie near the boundaries of the blocks assembled to make the induced coverage process, so that coverage of these locations in the induced coverage process does not necessarily correspond to coverage of their pre-images in the original coverage process.

**Lemma 7.26** *Suppose  $d \geq 2$ . Then  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(C_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)] = 1$ .*

**Proof** Set  $\tilde{\gamma} := \gamma$  if  $d = 2$ , or if  $d \geq 3$  set  $\tilde{\gamma} := \gamma'$ . Let  $\varepsilon \in (0, (1/d) - \tilde{\gamma})$ . The number of  $(d - 1)$ -dimensional cubes  $\lambda(t)$  making up  $L_t$  is  $O(t^{(d-1)\tilde{\gamma}})$ , and for each of these  $(d - 1)$  dimensional cubes, the number of balls of radius  $r_t$  required to cover the boundary is  $O((t^{-\tilde{\gamma}}r_t^{-1})^{d-2})$ . Hence we can take points  $x_{t,1}, \dots, x_{t,m_t} \in L_t$ , with  $m_t = O(t^{\tilde{\gamma}}r_t^{2-d})$ , such that  $C_t^0 \subset \cup_{i=1}^{m_t} B(x_{t,i}, r_t)$ . Then  $C_t \subset \cup_{i=1}^{m_t} B(x_{t,i}, 10r_t)$ . Hence by (7.56) from Lemma 7.22, we obtain the estimate

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(C_t \cap \mathbb{H}, \mathcal{U}'_t)^c] = O(t^{\tilde{\gamma}}r_t^{2-d}t^{\varepsilon-(d-1)/d}) = O(t^{\varepsilon+\tilde{\gamma}-1/d}),$$

which tends to zero. □

**Lemma 7.27** (Limiting coverage probabilities for the induced coverage process) *Suppose  $d \geq 2$ . Then*

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(S_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)] = \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(L_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)] = \exp(-c_{d,k}|\Gamma|e^{-\zeta}). \tag{7.64}$$

**Proof** The second equality of (7.64) is easily obtained using (7.17) from Lemma 7.4.

Recall that  $L_t = D_t \times \{0\}$ . Also  $\partial L_t \subset C_t^0$ , so that  $(\partial D_t \oplus B_{(d-1)}(o, r_t)) \times [0, 2r_t] \subset C_t$ , and therefore by (7.18) from Lemma 7.4,

$$\mathbb{P}[(F_t(L_t, \mathcal{U}'_t) \setminus F_t(S_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)) \cap F_t(C_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)] \rightarrow 0.$$

Therefore using also Lemma 7.26 shows that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(L_t, \mathcal{U}'_t) \setminus F_t(S_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)] \rightarrow 0$ , and this gives us the rest of (7.64). □

We are now ready to complete the proof of Proposition 7.19.

**Proof of Proposition 7.19** We shall approximate event  $F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)$  by events  $F_t(L_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)$  and  $F_t(S_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)$ , and apply Lemma 7.27.

Suppose  $F_t(Q_t^+ \cup T_t^+, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t) \setminus F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)$  occurs, and choose  $x \in V_t(\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t) \cap A_t^{**} \setminus (Q_t^+ \cup T_t^+)$ . Let  $y \in \Gamma_t$  with  $\|y - x\| = \text{dist}(x, \Gamma_t)$ . Then  $\|y - x\| \leq 2r_t$ , and since  $x \notin Q_t^+$ , by (7.59) we have  $\text{dist}(x, \partial_{d-2}\Gamma_t) \geq 8dt^{-\gamma'}$ , and hence  $\text{dist}(y, \partial_{d-2}\Gamma_t) \geq 8dt^{-\gamma'} - 2r_t \geq 7dt^{-\gamma'}$ , provided  $t$  is large enough. Therefore  $y$  lies in the interior of the face  $H_{t,i}$  for some  $i$  and  $x - y$  is perpendicular to  $H_{t,i}$  (if  $y \neq x$ ). Also (if  $d \geq 3$ ), since  $x \notin T_t^+$ ,  $\text{dist}(x, T_t) \geq 11r_t$ , so  $\text{dist}(y, T_t) \geq 9r_t$ . Therefore  $y \in I_{t,j}$  for some  $j$ , and  $x$  lies in the block  $S_{t,j}$ , and moreover  $\text{dist}(x, (\partial S_{t,j}^+) \setminus I_{t,j}) \geq 2r_t$ . Hence  $B(\rho_{t,j}(x), r_t) \cap \mathbb{H} \subset \rho_{t,j}(S_{t,j}^+)$ , and hence by (7.62),  $\mathcal{U}'_t(B(\rho_{t,j}(x), r_t)) = \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t(B(x, r_t)) < k$ , so event  $F_t(S_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)$  does not occur. Hence

$$F_t(S_t, \mathcal{U}'_t) \setminus F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t) \subset F_t(Q_t^+ \cup T_t^+, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)^c,$$

so by Lemmas 7.23 and 7.24,  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(S_t, \mathcal{U}'_t) \setminus F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)] \rightarrow 0$ , and hence using (7.64) we have

$$\liminf_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)] \geq \exp(-c_{d,k}|\Gamma|e^{-\zeta}). \tag{7.65}$$

Suppose  $F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t) \setminus F_t(L_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)$  occurs, and choose  $y \in L_t \cap V_t(\mathcal{U}'_t)$ . Take  $i \in \{1, \dots, \lambda(t)\}$  such that  $y \in \rho_{t,i}(I_{t,i})$ . Then  $\text{dist}(y, \rho_{t,i}(\partial I_{t,i})) \leq r_t$ , since otherwise  $\rho_{t,i}^{-1}(y)$  would be a location in  $A_t^{**} \cap V_t(\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)$ . Thus  $y \in C_t$  by (7.63), and therefore using Lemma 7.26 yields that

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t) \setminus F_t(L_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)] \leq \mathbb{P}[F_t(C_t, \mathcal{U}'_t)^c] \rightarrow 0.$$

Combining this with (7.64) and (7.65) completes the proof. □

**7.7 Proof of Theorem 3.1: conclusion**

Lemma 7.19 gives the limiting probability of coverage of a polytopal approximation to a region near part of  $\partial A$ . The next two lemmas show that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)]$  approximates  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}'_t)]$  (recall the definitions at (7.54)). From this we can deduce that we get the same limiting probability even after dispensing with the polytopal approximation.

**Lemma 7.28** *Let  $E_t^{(1)} := F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t) \setminus F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}'_t)$ . Then  $\mathbb{P}[E_t^{(1)}] \rightarrow 0$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

*Proof* Let  $\varepsilon \in (0, 2\gamma - 1/d)$ . Suppose  $E_t^{(1)} \cap F_t(Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}'_t)$  occurs. Then since  $\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t \subset \mathcal{P}'_t$ ,  $V_t(\mathcal{P}'_t)$  intersects with  $A_t^* \setminus A_t^{**}$ , and therefore by (7.53),  $V_t(\mathcal{P}'_t)$  includes locations distant at most  $2Kt^{-2\gamma}$  from  $\Gamma_t$ . Also  $\Gamma_t \cap V_t(\mathcal{P}'_t) = \emptyset$ , since  $\Gamma_t \subset A_t^{**}$ .

Pick a location  $x \in \overline{V_t(\mathcal{P}'_t)} \cap A_t^*$  of minimal distance from  $\Gamma_t$ . Then  $x \notin Q_t^+$ , so the nearest point in  $\Gamma_t$  to  $x$  lies in the interior of  $H_{t,i}$  for some  $i$ . We claim that  $x$  lies at the intersection of the boundaries of  $d$  balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on points of  $\mathcal{P}'_t$ ; this is proved similarly to the similar claim concerning  $w$  in the proof of Lemma 7.4. Moreover,  $x$  is covered by at most  $k - 1$  of the other balls centred in  $\mathcal{P}'_t$  (in fact, by exactly  $k - 1$  such balls, but we do not need this below). Also  $x$  does not lie in the interior of  $A_t^{**}$ .

Thus if  $E_t^{(1)} \cap F_t(Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}'_t)$  occurs, there must exist  $d$  points  $x_1, x_2, \dots, x_d$  of  $\mathcal{P}'_t$  such that  $\cap_{i=1}^d \partial B(x_i, r_t)$  includes a point in  $A_t^*$  but outside the interior of  $A_t^{**}$ , within distance  $2Kt^{-2\gamma}$  of  $\Gamma_t$  and further than  $r_t$  from all but at most  $k - 1$  other points of  $\mathcal{P}'_t$ . Hence by the Mecke formula, integrating first over the positions of  $x_2 - x_1, x_3 - x_1, \dots, x_d - x_1$  and then over the location of  $x_1$ , and using Lemma 7.20(a), Lemma 7.21 and (7.16), we obtain for suitable constants  $c, c'$  that

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[E_t^{(1)} \cap F_t(Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}'_t)] &\leq ct^d r_t^{d(d-1)} t^{-2\gamma} (tr_t^d)^{k-1} \exp(-(1 - \varepsilon)(\theta_d/2) f_0 tr_t^d) \\ &\leq c' (tr_t^d)^{k-1} t^{d+\varepsilon-2\gamma-(d-1)/d} r_t^{d(d-1)} \\ &= O((tr_t^d)^{d+k-2} t^{(1/d)-2\gamma+\varepsilon}), \end{aligned}$$

which tends to zero by (7.15). Also  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(Q_t^+, \mathcal{P}'_t)] \rightarrow 1$  by Lemma 7.23, so  $\mathbb{P}[E_t^{(1)}] \rightarrow 0$ . □

**Lemma 7.29** *Let  $G_t := F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}'_t) \setminus F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)$ . Then  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[G_t] = 0$ .*

**Proof** If event  $G_t$  occurs, then since  $A_t^{**} \subset A_t^*$ , there exists  $y \in A_t^{**} \cap V_t(\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)$  such that  $y$  is covered by at least one of the balls of radius  $r_t$  centred on  $\mathcal{P}'_t \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t$ . Hence there exists  $x \in \mathcal{P}'_t \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t$  with  $B(x, r_t) \cap V_t(\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t) \cap A_t^{**} \neq \emptyset$ . Therefore

$$G_t \subset F_t(\cup_{x \in \mathcal{P}'_t \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t} B(x, r_t) \cap A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)^c. \tag{7.66}$$

Let  $\varepsilon \in (0, 2\gamma - 1/d)$ . Let  $\mathcal{Q}_t := \mathcal{P}'_t \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t$ . Then  $\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t$  and  $\mathcal{Q}_t$  are independent homogeneous Poisson processes of intensity  $tf_0$  in  $\tilde{A}_t, A_t \setminus \tilde{A}_t$  respectively. By Lemma 7.22 and the union bound, there is a constant  $c$  such that for any  $m \in \mathbb{N}$  and any set of  $m$  points  $x_1, \dots, x_m$  in  $\mathbb{R}^d$ , we have

$$\mathbb{P}\left[F_t(\cup_{i=1}^m B(x_i, r_t) \cap A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)^c\right] \leq cmt^{\varepsilon - (d-1)/d}.$$

Let  $N_t := \mathcal{Q}_t(\mathbb{R}^d)$ . By Lemma 7.20(a),  $\mathbb{E}[N_t] = O(t^{1-2\gamma})$ , so that by conditioning on  $\mathcal{Q}_t$  we have for some constant  $c'$  that

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(\cup_{x \in \mathcal{Q}_t} B(x, r_t) \cap A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)^c] \leq ct^{\varepsilon - (d-1)/d} \mathbb{E}[N_t] \leq c't^{(1/d) - 2\gamma + \varepsilon},$$

which tends to zero by the choice of  $\varepsilon$ . Hence by (7.66),  $\mathbb{P}[G_t] \rightarrow 0$ . □

To complete the proof of Theorem 3.1, we shall break  $\partial A$  into finitely many pieces, with each piece contained in a single chart. We would like to write the probability that all of  $\partial A$  is covered as the product of probabilities for each piece, but to achieve the independence needed for this, we need to remove a region near the boundary of each piece. By separate estimates we can show the removed regions are covered with high probability, and this is the content of the next lemma.

Recall from (7.52) that  $\gamma_0 \in (1/(2d), \gamma)$ . Define the sets  $\Delta_t := \partial\Gamma \oplus B(o, t^{-\gamma_0})$  and  $\Delta_t^+ := \partial\Gamma \oplus B(o, 2t^{-\gamma_0})$ .

**Lemma 7.30** *It is the case that  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} F_t(\Delta_t^+ \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t) = 1$ .*

**Proof** Let  $\varepsilon \in (0, 2\gamma_0 - 1/d)$ . Since we assume  $\kappa(\partial\Gamma, r) = O(r^{2-d})$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ , for each  $t$  we can take  $x_{t,1}, \dots, x_{t,k(t)} \in \mathbb{R}^d$  with  $\partial\Gamma \subset \cup_{i=1}^{k(t)} B(x_{t,i}, t^{-\gamma_0})$ , and with  $k(t) = O(t^{(d-2)\gamma_0})$ . Then  $\Delta_t^+ \subset \cup_{i=1}^{k(t)} B(x_{t,i}, 3t^{-\gamma_0})$ . For each  $i \in \{1, \dots, k(t)\}$ , we can cover the ball  $B(x_{t,i}, 3t^{-\gamma_0})$  with  $O((t^{-\gamma_0}/r_t)^d)$  smaller balls of radius  $r_t$ . Then we end up with balls of radius  $r_t$ , denoted  $B_{t,1}, \dots, B_{t,m(t)}$  say, such that  $\Delta_t^+ \subset \cup_{i=1}^{m(t)} B_{t,i}$  and  $m(t) = O(r_t^{-d} t^{-2\gamma_0})$ . By (7.57) from Lemma 7.22, and the union bound,

$$\mathbb{P}[\cup_{i=1}^{m(t)} (F_t(B_{t,i} \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)^c)] = O(r_t^{-d} t^{-2\gamma_0} t^{\varepsilon - (d-1)/d}) = O(t^{(1/d) + \varepsilon - 2\gamma_0}),$$

which tends to zero. □

Given  $t > 0$ , define the sets  $\Gamma^{(t^{-\gamma_0})} := \Gamma \setminus \Delta_t$  and

$$\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})} := (\Gamma^{(t^{-\gamma_0})} \oplus B(o, r_t)) \cap A; \quad \Gamma_{r_t} := (\Gamma \oplus B(o, r_t)) \cap A,$$

and define the event  $F_t^\Gamma := F_t(\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}, \mathcal{P}_t)$ .

Note that the definition of  $F_t^\Gamma$  does not depend on the choice of chart. This is needed for the last stage of the proof of Theorem 3.1. Lemma 7.33 below shows that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t^\Gamma]$  is well approximated by  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}'_t)]$  and we have already determined the limiting behaviour of the latter. We prepare for the proof of Lemma 7.33 with two geometrical lemmas.

**Lemma 7.31** *For all large enough  $t$ , it is the case that  $\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})} \subset A_t^*$ .*

**Proof** Let  $x \in \Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}$ , and take  $y \in \Gamma^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}$  with  $\|x - y\| \leq r_t$ . Writing  $y = (u, \phi(u))$  with  $u \in U_t$ , we claim that  $\text{dist}(u, \partial U) \geq (1/2)t^{-\gamma_0}$ . Indeed, if we had  $\text{dist}(u, \partial U) < (1/2)t^{-\gamma_0}$ , then we could take  $w \in \partial U$  with  $\|u - w\| < (1/2)t^{-\gamma_0}$ . Then  $(w, \phi(w)) \in \partial \Gamma$  and by (7.51),  $|\phi(w) - \phi(u)| \leq (1/4)t^{-\gamma_0}$ , so

$$\|(u, \phi(u)) - (w, \phi(w))\| \leq \|u - w\| + |\phi(u) - \phi(w)| \leq (3/4)t^{-\gamma_0},$$

contradicting the assumption that  $y \in \Gamma^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}$ , so the claim is justified.

Writing  $x = (v, s)$  with  $v \in \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$ , and  $s \in \mathbb{R}$ , we have  $\|v - u\| \leq \|x - y\| \leq r_t$ , so  $\text{dist}(v, \partial U) \geq (1/2)t^{-\gamma_0} - r_t$ , and hence  $v \in U_t^-$ , provided  $t$  is big enough ( $U_t^-$  was defined shortly after (7.52).) Also  $|\phi(v) - \phi(u)| \leq r_t/4$  by (7.51), so  $|\phi_t(v) - \phi(u)| \leq r_t/2$ , provided  $t$  is big enough, by (7.53). Also  $|s - \phi(u)| \leq \|x - y\| \leq r_t$ , so  $|s - \phi_t(v)| \leq (3/2)r_t$ . Therefore  $x \in A_t^*$  by (7.54).  $\square$

**Lemma 7.32** *For all large enough  $t$ , we have (a)  $[A_t^* \oplus B(o, 4r_t)] \cap A \subset A_t$ , and (b)  $[A_t^* \oplus B(o, 4r_t)] \cap \partial A \subset \Gamma$ , and (c)  $[\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})} \oplus B(o, 4r_t)] \cap \partial A \subset \Gamma$ .*

**Proof** Let  $x \in A_t^*$ . Write  $x = (u, z)$  with  $u \in U_t^-$  and  $\phi_t(u) - 3r_t/2 \leq z \leq \phi(u)$ .

Let  $y \in B(x, 4r_t) \cap A$ , and write  $y = (v, s)$  with  $v \in \mathbb{R}^{d-1}$  and  $s \in \mathbb{R}$ . Then  $\|v - u\| \leq 4r_t$  so provided  $t$  is big enough,  $v \in U_t$ . Also  $|s - z| \leq 4r_t$ , and  $|\phi(v) - \phi(u)| \leq r_t$  by (7.51), so

$$|s - \phi(v)| \leq |s - z| + |z - \phi(u)| + |\phi(u) - \phi(v)| \leq 4r_t + 2r_t + r_t,$$

and since  $y \in A$ , by (7.49) and (7.50) we must have  $0 \leq s \leq \phi(v)$ , provided  $t$  is big enough. Therefore  $y = (v, s) \in A_t$ , which gives us (a).

If also  $y \in \partial A$ , then  $\phi(v) = s$ , so  $y \in \Gamma$ . Hence we have part (b). Then by Lemma 7.31 we also have part (c).  $\square$

**Lemma 7.33** *It is the case that  $\mathbb{P}[F_t^\Gamma \Delta F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}'_t)] \rightarrow 0$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .*

**Proof** Since  $\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})} \subset A_t^*$  by Lemma 7.31, and moreover  $\mathcal{P}'_t \subset \mathcal{P}_t$ , it follows that  $F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}'_t) \subset F_t(\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}, \mathcal{P}_t) = F_t^\Gamma$ . Therefore it suffices to prove that

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}'_t)] \rightarrow 0. \tag{7.67}$$

Let  $\varepsilon > 0$ . Suppose event  $F_t(\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}, \mathcal{P}_t) \cap F_t(\Delta_t^+ \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}'_t)$  occurs. Choose  $x \in A_t^* \cap V_t(\mathcal{P}'_t)$ . Then by Lemma 7.32(a),  $B(x, r_t) \cap A \subset A_t$ . Hence  $\mathcal{P}_t \cap B(x, r_t) \subset \mathcal{P}'_t$ , and therefore  $x \in V_t(\mathcal{P}_t)$ .



Since we are assuming  $F_t(\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}, \mathcal{P}_t)$  occurs, we therefore have  $\text{dist}(x, \Gamma^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}) > r_t$ . Since we also assume  $F_t(\Delta_t^+ \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)$ , we also have  $\text{dist}(x, \partial\Gamma) \geq 2t^{-\gamma_0}$  and therefore  $\text{dist}(x, \Delta_t) = \text{dist}(x, (\partial\Gamma) \oplus B(o, t^{-\gamma_0})) \geq t^{-\gamma_0} > r_t$ . Hence

$$\text{dist}(x, \Gamma) \geq \min(\text{dist}(x, \Gamma^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}), \text{dist}(x, (\partial\Gamma) \oplus B(o, t^{-\gamma_0}))) > r_t.$$

Moreover, by Lemma 7.32(b),  $\text{dist}(x, (\partial A) \setminus \Gamma) \geq 4r_t$ . Thus  $\text{dist}(x, \partial A) > r_t$ .

Moreover,  $\text{dist}(x, \partial A) \leq \text{dist}(x, \Gamma) \leq 2r_t$  because  $x \in A_t^*$ , and therefore  $x \notin A^{[\varepsilon]}$  (provided  $t$  is large enough) since  $\overline{A^{[\varepsilon]}}$  is compact and contained in  $A^o$  (the set  $A^{[\varepsilon]}$  was defined in Sect. 2.) Therefore the event  $F_t(A^{(r_t)} \setminus A^{[\varepsilon]}, \mathcal{P}_t)^c$  occurs. Thus, for large enough  $t$  we have the event inclusion

$$F_t(\Gamma_{r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}, \mathcal{P}_t) \cap F_t(\Delta_t^+ \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}_t) \subset F_t(A^{(r_t)} \setminus A^{[\varepsilon]}, \mathcal{P}_t)^c. \tag{7.68}$$

By (7.15),

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\theta_d t f_0 r_t^d - \log(t f_0) - (d + k - 2) \log \log t) = \begin{cases} 2\zeta & \text{if } d = 2, k = 1 \\ +\infty & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \tag{7.69}$$

Hence by Proposition 3.4 (taking  $B = A \setminus A^{[\varepsilon]}$ , and using (6.4)),

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(r_t)} \setminus A^{[\varepsilon]}, \mathcal{P}_t)] = \begin{cases} \exp(-|A \setminus A^{[\varepsilon]}|e^{-2\zeta}) & \text{if } d = 2, k = 1 \\ 1 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \tag{7.70}$$

Therefore since  $\varepsilon$  can be arbitrarily small and  $|A \setminus A^{[\varepsilon]}| \rightarrow 0$  as  $\varepsilon \downarrow 0$ , the event displayed on the left hand side of (7.68) has probability tending to zero. Then using Lemma 7.30, we have (7.67), which completes the proof.  $\square$

**Corollary 7.34** *It is the case that  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t^\Gamma] = \exp(-c_{d,k}|\Gamma|e^{-\zeta})$ .*

**Proof** By Lemmas 7.28 and 7.29,  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(A_t^*, \mathcal{P}_t) \Delta F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)] \rightarrow 0$ . Then by Lemma 7.33,  $\mathbb{P}[F_t^\Gamma \Delta F_t(A_t^{**}, \tilde{\mathcal{P}}_t)] \rightarrow 0$ , and now the result follows by Proposition 7.19.  $\square$

**Proof of Theorem 3.1** Let  $x_1, \dots, x_J$  and  $r(x_1), \dots, r(x_J)$  be as described at (7.48). Set  $\Gamma_j := B(x_j, r(x_j)) \cap \partial A$ , and for  $j = 2, \dots, J$ , let

$$\Gamma_j := \overline{B(x_j, r(x_j)) \cap \partial A \setminus \bigcup_{i=1}^{j-1} B(x_i, r(x_i))}.$$

Then  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_J$  comprise a finite collection of closed sets in  $\partial A$  with disjoint interiors, each of which satisfies  $\kappa(\Gamma_i, r) = O(r^{2-d})$  as  $r \downarrow 0$ , and is contained in a

single chart  $B(x_j, r(x_j))$ , and with union  $\partial A$ . For  $1 \leq i \leq J$ , define  $F_t^{\Gamma_i}$  similarly to  $F_t^\Gamma$ , that is,  $F_t^{\Gamma_i} := F_t(\Gamma_{i,r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}, \mathcal{P}_t)$  with

$$\Gamma_{i,r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})} := ([\Gamma_i \setminus ((\partial \Gamma_i) \oplus B(o, t^{-\gamma_0}))] \oplus B(o, r_t)) \cap A,$$

and  $\partial \Gamma_i := \Gamma_i \cap \overline{\partial A \setminus \Gamma_i}$ . First we claim that the following event inclusion holds:

$$\bigcap_{i=1}^J F_t^{\Gamma_i} \cap F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t) \subset \left( \bigcap_{i=1}^J F_t([\partial \Gamma_i] \oplus B(o, 2t^{-\gamma_0})] \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t \right)^c.$$

Indeed, suppose  $\bigcap_{i=1}^J F_t^{\Gamma_i} \cap F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)$  occurs, and choose  $x \in A \cap V_t(\mathcal{P}_t)$ . Then  $\text{dist}(x, \partial A) \leq r_t$  since we assume  $F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)$  occurs. Then for some  $i \in \{1, \dots, J\}$  and some  $y \in \Gamma_i$  we have  $\|x - y\| \leq r_t$ . Since we assume  $F_t^{\Gamma_i}$  occurs, we have  $x \notin \Gamma_{i,r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}$ , and hence  $\text{dist}(y, \partial \Gamma_i) \leq t^{-\gamma_0}$ , so  $\text{dist}(x, \partial \Gamma_i) < 2t^{-\gamma_0}$ . Therefore  $F_t([\partial \Gamma_i] \oplus B(o, 2t^{-\gamma_0})] \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)$  fails to occur, justifying the claim.

By the preceding claim and the union bound,

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)] &\leq \mathbb{P}[\bigcap_{i=1}^J F_t^{\Gamma_i} \cap F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)] \\ &\leq \mathbb{P}[F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)] + \sum_{i=1}^J \mathbb{P}[F_t([\partial \Gamma_i] \oplus B(o, 2t^{-\gamma_0})] \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)^c]. \end{aligned} \tag{7.71}$$

By Lemma 7.30,  $\mathbb{P}[F_t([\partial \Gamma_i] \oplus B(o, 2t^{-\gamma_0})] \cap A, \mathcal{P}_t)] \rightarrow 1$  for each  $i$ . Therefore by (2.2) and (7.71),

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[R'_{t,k} \leq r_t] = \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A, \mathcal{P}_t)] = \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[\bigcap_{i=1}^J F_t^{\Gamma_i} \cap F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)], \tag{7.72}$$

provided the last limit exists. By Corollary 7.34, we have for each  $i$  that

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} (\mathbb{P}[F_t^{\Gamma_i}]) = \exp(-c_{d,k} |\Gamma_i| e^{-\zeta}). \tag{7.73}$$

Also, we claim that for large enough  $t$  the events  $F_t^{\Gamma_1}, \dots, F_t^{\Gamma_J}$  are mutually independent. Indeed, given distinct  $i, j \in \{1, \dots, J\}$ , if  $x \in \Gamma_{i,r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}$  and  $y \in \Gamma_{j,r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}$ , then we can take  $y' \in \Gamma_j \setminus ((\partial \Gamma_j) \oplus B(o, t^{-\gamma_0}))$  with  $\|y' - y\| \leq r_t$ . If  $\|x - y\| \leq 2r_t$  then by the triangle inequality  $\|x - y'\| \leq 3r_t$ , but since  $y' \notin \Gamma_i$ , this would contradict Lemma 7.32(c). Therefore  $\|x - y\| > 2r_t$ , and hence the  $r_t$ -neighbourhoods of  $\Gamma_{i,r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}$  and of  $\Gamma_{j,r_t}^{(t^{-\gamma_0})}$  are disjoint. This gives us the independence claimed.

Now observe that  $F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t) \subset F_t(A^{(4r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)$ , and we claim that

$$\mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(4r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t) \setminus F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)] \rightarrow 0 \quad \text{as } t \rightarrow \infty. \tag{7.74}$$

Indeed, given  $\varepsilon > 0$ , for large  $t$  the probability on the left side of (7.74) is bounded by  $\mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(r_t)} \setminus A^{[\varepsilon]}, \mathcal{P}_t)^c]$ , and by (7.70) the latter probability tends to a limit which can be made arbitrarily small by the choice of  $\varepsilon$ . Hence by Proposition 3.4 (using (6.4)) and (7.69),

$$\begin{aligned} \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(4r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)] &= \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[F_t(A^{(r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)] \\ &= \begin{cases} \exp(-|A|e^{-2\zeta}) & \text{if } d = 2, k = 1 \\ 1 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \end{aligned} \tag{7.75}$$

Moreover, by (7.72) and (7.74),

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[R'_{t,k} \leq r_t] = \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{P}[\bigcap_{i=1}^J F_t^{r_i} \cap F_t(A^{(4r_t)}, \mathcal{P}_t)], \tag{7.76}$$

provided the last limit exists. However, the events in the right hand side of (7.76) are mutually independent, so using (7.73), (7.75) and (7.15), we obtain the second equality of (3.3). We then obtain the rest of (3.3) using Lemma 7.1.  $\square$

**Acknowledgements** I thank Alastair King and Andrew du Plessis for some helpful conversations during the preparation of this paper. I thank an anonymous referee, and also Xiaochuan Yang, for reading through earlier versions and making some helpful observations.

**Data availability** Data sharing not applicable to this article as no datasets were generated or analysed during the current study.

**Open Access** This article is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution 4.0 International License, which permits use, sharing, adaptation, distribution and reproduction in any medium or format, as long as you give appropriate credit to the original author(s) and the source, provide a link to the Creative Commons licence, and indicate if changes were made. The images or other third party material in this article are included in the article’s Creative Commons licence, unless indicated otherwise in a credit line to the material. If material is not included in the article’s Creative Commons licence and your intended use is not permitted by statutory regulation or exceeds the permitted use, you will need to obtain permission directly from the copyright holder. To view a copy of this licence, visit <http://creativecommons.org/licenses/by/4.0/>.

## References

1. Aaron, C., Cholaquidis, A., Fraiman, R.: A generalization of the maximal-spacings in several dimensions and a convexity test. *Extremes* **20**, 605–634 (2017)
2. Athreya, S., Roy, R., Sarkar, A.: On the coverage of space by random sets. *Adv. Appl. Probab.* **36**, 1–18 (2004)
3. Baccelli, F., Błaszczyszyn, B.: Stochastic geometry and wireless networks I: theory. *Found. Trends Netw.* **4**, 1–312 (2009)
4. Bobrowski, O., Weinberger, S.: On the vanishing of homology in random Čech complexes. *Random Struct. Algorithms* **51**, 14–51 (2017)
5. Bräker, H., Hsing, T., Bingham, N.H.: On the Hausdorff distance between a convex set and an interior random convex hull. *Adv. Appl. Probab.* **30**, 295–316 (1998)
6. Calka, P., Chenavier, N.: Extreme values for characteristic radii of a Poisson–Voronoi tessellation. *Extremes* **17**, 359–385 (2014)
7. Chiu, S.N., Stoyan, D., Kendall, W.S., Mecke, J.: *Stochastic Geometry and Its Applications*, 3rd edn. Wiley, Chichester (2013)
8. Cuevas, A., Rodríguez-Casal, A.: On boundary estimation. *Adv. Appl. Probab.* **36**, 340–354 (2004)

9. de Kergorlay, H.-L., Tillmann, U., Vipond, O.: Random Čech complexes on manifolds with boundary. *Random Struct. Algorithms* (61) **2022**, 309–352 (2022). (Preprint, [arxiv:1906.07626](https://arxiv.org/abs/1906.07626))
10. Deheuvels, P., Einmahl, J.H.J., Mason, D.M., Ruyngaert, F.: The almost sure behavior of maximal and minimal multivariate  $k_n$ -spacings. *J. Multivar. Anal.* **24**, 155–176 (1988)
11. Flatto, L., Newman, D.J.: Random coverings. *Acta Math.* **138**, 241–264 (1977)
12. Hall, P.: Distribution of size, structure and number of vacant regions in a high-intensity mosaic. *Z. Wahrsch. Verw. Gebiete* **70**, 237–261 (1985)
13. Hall, P.: *Introduction to the Theory of Coverage Processes*. Wiley, New York (1988)
14. Henze, N.: On the consistency of the spacings test for multivariate uniformity, including on manifolds. *J. Appl. Probab.* **55**, 659–665 (2018)
15. Iyer, S.K., Manjunath, D., Yogeshwaran, D.: Limit laws for  $k$ -coverage of paths by a Markov–Poisson–Boolean model. *Stoch. Models* **24**, 558–582 (2008)
16. Janson, S.: Random coverings in several dimensions. *Acta Math.* **156**, 83–118 (1986)
17. Janson, S.: Maximal spacings in several dimensions. *Ann. Probab.* **15**, 274–280 (1987)
18. Lan, G.-L., Ma, Z.-M., Sun, S.-Y.: Coverage of random discs driven by a Poisson point process. In: Barbour, A.D., Chan, H.P., Ziegmond, D. (eds.) *Probability Approximations and Beyond*, pp. 43–59. Springer, New York (2012)
19. Last, G., Penrose, M.: *Lectures on the Poisson Process*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge (2018)
20. Moran, P.A.P., Fazekas de St Groth, S.: Random circles on a sphere. *Biometrika* **49**, 389–396 (1962)
21. Penrose, M.: *Random Geometric Graphs*. Oxford University Press, Oxford (2003)
22. Penrose, M. D., Yang, X.: Largest nearest-neighbour link and connectivity threshold in a polytopal random sample, preprint, [arXiv:2301.02506](https://arxiv.org/abs/2301.02506) (2023)
23. Zhigljavsky, A., Žilinskas, A.: *Stochastic Global Optimization*. Springer, New York (2008)

**Publisher's Note** Springer Nature remains neutral with regard to jurisdictional claims in published maps and institutional affiliations.